00045440

Digitized with financial assistance from

HT Parekh FOUNDATION

An Initiative by HDFC

WITH YOU, RIGHT THROUGH

on 15 October, 2018

45440

December 1893. For this year the Original-Series Texts were issued in 1892, and so was one of the Extra-Series Texts; while the other went out early in 1893. The Texts of both Series for 1894 and 1895 are now ready, except the Facsimiles for the *Prymer*, Part I. The Original Series Texts for 1896 are almost ready, and will be issued in 1894, with those for the Extra Series, as well as some Texts for 1897. **Members are askt to send their two- or three-years' subscriptions for both Series at once in advance.**

The Original-Series Texts for 1893 are:—No. 100, Capgrave's *Life of St. Katharine*, the text edited by Dr. C. Horstmann, with Forewords, side-notes, and a discussion of Chaucer's *gh* and Shakspere's long *i*, by Dr. F. J. Furnivall; and No. 101, the *Cursor Mundi*, Part VII and last, an Essay on the MSS. of the Poem, their Dialects and Relation, &c., by Dr. H. Hupe.

The Extra-Series Texts for 1893 are—No. LXIII. Thomas à Kempis's *De Imitatione Christi*, englisht: the first three books from the MS. in Trinity College Dublin, about 1440 A.D., and from Dr. Wm. Atkynson's version, printed by Wynkyn de Worde in 1502; and the fourth book by Margaret, Countess of Richmond and Derby, Mother of Henry VII; the whole edited by Prof. J. E. Ingram, LL.D.; and No. LXIV. Dr. Mary N. Colvin's edition of Caxton's *Godfrey of Bolayne, or Last Siege of Jerusalem*, A.D. 1481.

The Original Series Texts for 1894 are—No. 102. Part I of Dr. R. von Fleischhacker's edition of the englisht *Lanfranc's Cirurgie*, about 1400 A.D., a treatise perhaps more valuable for Dictionary purposes than any yet issued by the Society, which takes up to Chaucer's death the whole class of surgical and medical words (besides many others of common speech) which we before had only from the black-letters of Queen Elizabeth's time. No. 103, is Prof. Napier's edition of a 12th-century Homily on the *Legend of the Cross*, with an Introduction on the different Legends about it, an incomplete Chester *Hymn to the Virgin* of the 15th century, and a short Paper on the soft and hard *g*'s of the *Ormulum* MS., with a facsimile.

The Extra Series Texts for 1894 are No. LXV, the 3rd and last Part of *Sir Bevis of Hamton*, edited by Prof. Kölbing, Ph.D., and No. LXVI, Lydgate's and Burgh's *Secrees of Philisoffres*, edited by Robert Steele, B.A.

For 1895, the first Text of the Original Series is No. 104, Part I of Mr. Gollancz's re-edition of *The Exeter Book*, from the unique MS. The second is Part I of the *Prymer or Lay Folks' Prayer-Book*, from the MS. ab. 1420 A.D., in the Cambr. Univ. Libr., ed. by Mr. Hy. Littlehales, with four pages of Facsimiles, which are promist in January 1894.

The Extra Series Texts for 1895 are two prose Romances from unique MSS., about 1500 A.D., englisht from French originals: *The Three Kings' Sons*, Part I, the text, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall; *Melusine*, Pt. I, the text, ed. A. K. Donald, B.A.

During 1892, two unexpected sources of help to the Society sprang up. First, Mr. Henry Littlehales of Bexley Heath, who had printed a MS. of the English *Prymer*, ab. 1400 A.D., kindly offerd to copy, and pay for the setting, not only of the Cambridge University MS of the *Prymer*, ab. 1425 A.D., but also of a series of extracts from the Rochester Diocesan Registers, illustrating the religious condition and social life of the diocese. The text of the *Prymer* or Lay Folks' Prayer-book is issued, and forms a valuable portion of the Society's Pre-Reformation vernacular Liturgical Series, undertaken on the recommendation of the late Canon Simmons. The Extracts from the Rochester Diocesan Registers are nearly half copied. Mr. Littlehales has also put himself generally at the Society's service, and has copied half of the Salisbury Cathedral MS of that very quaint treatise, *Jacob's Well*, about the middle of the 15th century. Mr. Littlehales has likewise copied, and will edit for the Society, the very interesting set of Accounts of Prior Moore of Worcester, 1518-35, besides *The Pore Caitif*, &c., &c.

The second promise of help comes, most gratifyingly, from the University of Chicago. Two Professors in the English Department there, Mr. MacClintock and Mr. Oscar Triggs—with the assent of their Principal, Dr. Harper—agreed to edit and print at the Chicago University Press, two Early English Texts to be issued jointly by the University and the E. E. T. Society, the Society paying for the electrotypes. Prof. MacClintock chose the theological collection of John Lacy of Newcastle, A.D. 1434 (see p. 10 below), and Prof. Triggs chose Lydgate's *Assembly of the Gods*. The latter of these is now at press in Chicago.

Such relief as the E. E. T. Soc. gets from the above-named helpers will be devoted to its Reprinting Fund. The out-of-print Texts for 1866 are greatly wanted by members and collectors to complete their sets of the Society's publications.

An urgent appeal is hereby made to Members to increase the list of Subscribers to the E. E. Text Society. It is nothing less than a scandal that the Hellenic Society should have nearly 1000 members, while the Early English Text Society has only about 300!

The Original-Series Texts for 1896 and 1897 will be chosen from books already at press: Richard Misyn's—he was Prior of Lincoln—englishings in 1434 and 1435 of Richard Rolle of Hampole's *Fire of Love* and *Meending of Life*, edited by the Rev. Rt. Harvey, M.A., Headmaster of the Cork Grammar School; Part II of the *Minor Poems of the Vernon MS.*, edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall; Mr. Gollancz's re-edited *Exeter Book*—Anglo-Saxon poems from the unique MS. in Exeter Cathedral—Part II; Miss Pemberton's edition of the fragments of Queen Elizabeth's englishings (in the Record Office) from Boethius, Plutarch,

&c.: Dr. Bruce's Introduction to *The English Conquest of Ireland*; Dr. Furnivall's edition of the *Lichfield Gilds*, which is all printed, and waits only for the Introduction, that Prof. E. C. K. Gonner has kindly undertaken to write for the book. Prof. Mead has sent to press the completion of the prose *Merlin*, for which the Society has been looking in vain from its Treasurer since 1870. Miss Mary Bateson has at press George Ashby's *Active Policy of a Prince*, &c., from the unique MS, A.D. 1463. Mr. Utley is home from Roumania, and promises to finish *Lydgesay's* Works this year. Dr. G. Herzfeld's re-edition of the Anglo-Saxon *Martyrology* is all in type. Part II of Dr. Holthausen's *Vices and Virtues* needs only its Glossary.

Dr. Furnivall has nearly finisht a most curious volume of *Depositions as to Child-Marriages and -Divorces, Troth-plights, Libels*, &c., 1561-6, from the Chester Diocesan Registry.

Mr. Steele has in type, besides the earliest Treatise on *Arithmetic*, englisht from Johannes de *Sacro Bosco*, two prose englishings of the *Secreta Secretorum* from MSS. at Lambeth, the second of which is very rich in new words. A version by James Yonge in 1428, made for the Earl of Ormonde, has been copied from its Rawlinson MS. at Oxford, and collated with the later Lambeth MS. All three versions differ widely.

The Texts for the Extra Series in 1896 and 1897 will be chosen from the prose Romance of *Melusine*, edited from the unique MS. by Mr. A. K. Donald, Part II; *The Three Kings' Sons*, Part II, the Introduction &c. by Dr. Leon Kellner; *The Towneley Plays*, re-edited from the unique MS. by Mr. George England and A. W. Pollard, M.A.; Part II of *The Chester Plays*, re-edited from the MSS., with a full collation of the formerly missing Devonshire MS., by Mr. G. England (at press); the Winchester Cathedral MS. of the *Procsoterium Parvulorum*, edited by the Rev. A. L. Mayhew, M.A.; the Parallel-Text of the only two MSS. of the *Owl and Nightingale*, edited by Mr. G. F. H. Sykes (at press); Hoccleve's englishing of *De Regimine Principum*, 1411-12, and Robert of Brunne's *Handlyng Synne*, edited by Dr. Furnivall; Deguilleville's *Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*, three prose versions—two English, one French—edited by G. N. Currie, M.A. Some of these Texts will be ready in 1893. **Members are therefore askt to send Advance Subscriptions in 1893, for 1894, 1895 and 1896**, in order that the 1894-6 books may be issued to them as soon as the editions are finisht. The Society's experience has shown that Editors must be taken when they are in the humour for work. All real Students and furtherers of the Society's purpose will be ready to push on the issue of Texts. Those Members who care only a guinea a year (or can afford only that sum) for the history of our language and our nation's thought, will not be hurt by those who care more, getting their books in advance; on the contrary, they will be benefited, as each successive year's work will then be ready for issue on New Year's Day. Members are askt to realise the fact that the Society has now 50 years' work on its Lists,—at its present rate of production,—and that there is from 100 to 200 more years' work to come after that. The year 2000 will not see finisht all the Texts that the Society ought to print.

Mr. G. N. Currie is preparing an edition of the 15th and 16th century Prose Versions of Guillaume de Deguilleville's *Pilgrimage of the Life of Man*, with the French prose version by Jean Gallopes, from Mr. Henry Hucks Gibbs's MS., Mr. Gibbs having generously promist to pay the extra cost of printing the French text, and engraving one or two of the illuminations in his MS.

Guillaume de Deguilleville, monk of the Cistercian abbey of Chaalis, in the diocese of Senlis, wrote his first verse *Pelerinage de l'Homme* in 1330-1 when he was 36.[1] Twenty-five (or six) years after, in 1355, he revised his poem, and issued a second version of it, and this is the only one that has been printed. Of the prose representative of the first version, 1330-1, a prose Englishing, about 1430 A.D., was edited by Mr. Aldis Wright for the Roxburghe Club in 1869, from MS. Ff. 5. 30 in the Cambridge University Library. Other copies of this prose English are in the Hunterian Museum, Glasgow, Q. 2. 25; Univ. Coll. and Corpus Christi, Oxford[2]; and the Laud Collection in the Bodleian, no. 740. A copy in the Northern dialect is MS. G. 21, in St. John's Coll., Cambridge, and this is the MS. which will be edited by Mr. Sidney J. Herrtage for the E. E. Text Society. The Laud MS. 740 was somewhat cond—st and modernised, in the 17th century, into MS. Ff. 6. 30, in the Cambridge University Library:[3] "The Pilgrime or the Pilgrimage of Man in this World," copied by Will. Baspoole, whose copy "was verbatim written by Walter Parker, 1645, and from thence transcribed by G. G. 1649; and from thence by W. A. 1655." This last copy may have been read by, or its story reported to, Bunyan, and may have been the groundwork of his *Pilgrim's Progress*. It will be edited by Mr. Currie for the E. E. T. Soc., its text running under the earlier English, as in Mr. Herrtage's edition of the *Gesta Romanorum* for the Society. In February 1464,[4] Jean Gallopes—a clerk of Angers, afterwards chaplain to John, Duke of Bedford, Regent of France—turned Deguilleville's first verse *Pelerinage* into a prose *Pelerinage de la vie humaine*.[5] By the kindness of Mr. Hy. Hucks Gibbs, as above mentiond, Gallopes's French text will be printed opposite the early prose northern Englishing in the Society's edition.

[1] He was born about 1295. See Abbé Goujet's *Bibliothèque française*, Vol. IX, p. 73-4.—F. M.
[2] These 3 MSS. have not yet been collated, but are believed to be all of the same version.
[3] Another MS. is in the Pepys Library. [4] According to Mr. Hy. Hucks Gibbs's MS.
[5] These were printed in France, late in the 15th or early in the 16th century.

The Second Version of Deguilleville's *Pelerinaige de l'Homme*, A.D. 1355 or -6, was englisht in verse by Lydgate in 1426. Of Lydgate's poem, the larger part is in the Cotton MS. Vitellius C. xiii (leaves 2-308). This MS. leaves out Chaucer's englishing of Deguilleville's *A B C* or *Prayer to the Virgin*, of which the successive stanzas start with A, B, C, and run all thro' the alphabet; and it has 2 gaps, of which most of the second can be fild up from the end of the other imperfect MS. Cotton, Tiberius A vii. The rest of the stopgaps must be got from the original French in Harleian 4389,[1] and Additional 22,937[2] and 25,594[3] in the British Museum. Lydgate's version will be edited in due course for the Society.

Besides his first *Pelerinaige de l'homme* in its two versions, Deguilleville wrote a second, "de l'ame separee du corps," and a third, "de nostre seigneur Iesus." Of the second, a prose Englishing of 1413, *The Pilgrimage of the Soule* (perhaps in part by Lydgate), exists in the Egerton MS. 615,[4] at Hatfield, Cambridge (Univ. Kk. 1. 7, Caius), Oxford (Univ. Coll. and Corpus), and in Caxton's edition of 1483. This version has 'somewhat of addicions' as Caxton says, and some shortenings too, as the maker of both, the first translator, tells us in the MSS. Caxton leaves out the earlier englisher's interesting Epilog in the Egerton MS. This prose englishing of the *Soule* will be edited for the Society after that of the *Man* is finisht, and will have Gallopes's French opposite it, from Mr. Gibbs's MS., as his gift to the Society. Of the Pilgrimage of Jesus, no englishing is known.

As to the MS. Anglo-Saxon Psalters, Dr. Hy. Sweet has edited the oldest MS., the Vespasian, in his *Oldest English Texts* for the Society, and Mr. Harsley has edited the latest, c. 1150, Eadwine's Canterbury Psalter. The other MSS., except the Paris one, being interlinear versions,—some of the Roman-Latin redaction, and some of the Gallican,—Prof. Logeman has prepared for press, a Parallel-Text edition of the first twelve Psalms, to start the complete work. He will do his best to get the Paris Psalter—tho' it is not an interlinear one—into this collective edition; but the additional matter, especially in the Verse-Psalms, is very difficult to manage. If the Paris text cannot be parallelised, it will form a separate volume. The Early English Psalters are all independent versions, and will follow separately in due course.

Through the good offices of the Examiners, some of the books for the Early-English Examinations of the University of London will be chosen from the Society's publications, the Committee having undertaken to supply such books to students at a large reduction in price. The profits from these sales will be applied to the Society's Reprints. Five of its 1866 Texts, and one of its 1867, still need reproducing. Donations for this purpose will be welcome. They should be paid to the Hon. Sec., Mr. W. A. Dalziel, 67 Victoria Rd., Finsbury Park, London, N.

Members are reminded that *fresh Subscribers are always wanted*, and that the Committee can at any time, on short notice, send to press an additional Thousand Pounds' worth of work.

The Subscribers to the Original Series must be prepared for the issue of the whole of the Early English *Lives of Saints*, sooner or later. The Society cannot leave out any of them, even though some are dull. The Sinners would doubtless be much more interesting. But in many Saints' Lives will be found valuable incidental details of our forefathers' social state, and all are worthful for the history of our language. The Lives may be lookt on as the religious romances or story-books of their period.

The Standard Collection of Saints' Lives in the Corpus and Ashmole MSS., the Harleian MS. 2277, &c. will repeat the Laud set, our No. 87, with additions, and in right order. (The foundation MS. (Laud 108) had to be printed first, to prevent quite unwieldy collations.) The Supplementary Lives from the Vernon and other MSS. will form one or two separate volumes.

Besides the Saints' Lives, Trevisa's englishing of *Bartholomæus de Proprietatibus Rerum*, the mediæval Cyclopædia of Science, &c., will be the Society's next big undertaking. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker will edit it. Prof. Napier of Oxford, wishing to have the whole of our MS. Anglo-Saxon in type, and accessible to students, will edit for the Society all the unprinted and other Anglo-Saxon Homilies which are not included in Thorpe's edition of Ælfric's prose,[5] Dr. Morris's of the Blickling Homilies, and Prof. Skeat's of Ælfric's Metrical Homilies. Prof. Kölbing has also undertaken for the Society's Extra Series a Parallel-Text of all the six MSS. of the *Ancren Riwle*, one of the most important foundation-documents of Early English. Mr. Harvey, too, means to prepare an edition of the three MSS. of the *Earliest English Metrical Psalter*, one of which was edited by the late Mr. Stevenson for the Surtees Society.

1 15th cent., containing only the *Vie humaine*.
2 15th cent., containing all the 3 Pilgrimages, the 3rd being Jesus Christ's.
3 14th cent., containing the *Vie humaine* and the 2nd Pilgrimage, *de l'Ame*: both incomplete.
4 Ab. 1430, 106 leaves (leaf 1 of text wanting), with illuminations of nice little devils—red, green, tawny &c.—and damnd souls, fires, angels &c.
5 Of these, Mr. Harsley is preparing a new edition, with collations of all the MSS. Many copies of Thorpe's book, not issued by the Ælfric Society, are still in stock.
Of the Vercelli Homilies, the Society has bought the copy made by Prof. G. Lattanzi.

In case more Texts are ready at any time than can be paid for by the current year's income, they will be dated the next year, and issued in advance to such Members as will pay advance subscriptions. The 1886-7 delay in getting out Texts must not occur again, if it can possibly be avoided. The Director has in hand for future volunteer Editors copies of 2 or 3 MSS.

Members of the Society will learn with pleasure that its example has been followed, not only by the Old French Text Society which has done such admirable work under its founders Profs. Paul Meyer and Gaston Paris, but also by the Early Russian Text Society, which was set on foot in 1877, and has since issued many excellent editions of old MS. Chronicles &c.

Members will also note with pleasure the annexation of large tracts of our Early English territory by the important German contingent under General Zupitza, Colonels Kölbing and Horstmann, volunteers Hausknecht, Einenkel, Haenisch, Kaluza, Hupe, Adam, Holthausen, Schick, &c. &c. Scandinavia has also sent us Prof. Erdmann; Holland, Prof. H. Logeman, who is now working in Belgium; France, Prof. Paul Meyer—with Gaston Paris as adviser;—Italy, Prof. Lattanzi; Hungary, Dr. von Fleischhacker; while America is represented by Prof. Child, Dr. Mary Noyes Colvin, Profs. Mead, Perrin, McClintock, Trigg, &c. The sympathy, the ready help, which the Society's work has called forth from the Continent and the United States, have been among the pleasantest experiences of the Society's life, a real aid and cheer amid all troubles and discouragements. All our Members are grateful for it, and recognise that the bond their work has woven between them and the lovers of language and antiquity across the seas is one of the most welcome results of the Society's efforts.

ORIGINAL SERIES.

Half the Publications for 1866 (13, 14, 15, 22) are out of print, but will be gradually reprinted. Subscribers who desire the issue for 1866 should send their guineas at once to the Hon. Secretary, in order that other Texts for 1866 may be sent to press.

The Publications for 1864-1894 *(one guinea each year, save those for* 1866 *now half out of print, two guineas) are:—*

1. **Early English Alliterative Poems**, ab. 1360 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 16s. 1864
2. **Arthur**, ab. 1440, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 4s. ,,
3. **Lauder on the Dewtie of Kyngis, &c.**, 1556, ed. F. Hall, D.C.L. 4s. ,,
4. **Sir Gawayne and the Green Knight**, ab. 1360, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. ,,
5. **Hume's Orthographie and Congruitie of the Britan Tongue**, ab. 1617, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s. 1865
6. **Lancelot of the Laik**, ab. 1500, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 8s. ,,
7. **Genesis & Exodus**, ab. 1250, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 8s. ,,
8. **Morte Arthure**, ab. 1440, ed. E. Brock. 7s. ,,
9. **Thynne on Speght's ed. of Chaucer**, A.D. 1599, ed. Dr. G. Kingsley and Dr. F. J. Furnivall. 10s. ,,
10. **Merlin**, ab. 1449, Part I., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 2s. 6d. ,,
11. **Lyndesay's Monarche, &c.**, 1552, Part I., ed. J. Small, M.A. 3s. ,,
12. **Wright's Chaste Wife**, ab. 1462, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 1s. ,,
13. **Seinte Marherete**, 1200-1330, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne: to be re-edited by Prof. Herford, M.A., Ph.D. 1866
14. **Kyng Horn, Floris and Blanchefleur, &c.**, ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby, B.D. ,,
15. **Political, Religious, and Love Poems**, ed. F. J. Furnivall. ,,
16. **The Book of Quinte Essence**, ab. 1460-70, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s. *[In print.]* ,,
17. **Parallel Extracts from 45 MSS. of Piers the Plowman**, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 1s. *[In print.]* ,,
18. **Hali Meidenhad**, ab. 1200, ed. Rev. O. Cockayne. *[In print.]* ,,
19. **Lyndesay's Monarche, &c.**, Part II., ed. J. Small, M.A. 3s. 6d. *[In print.]* ,,
20. **Hampole's English Prose Treatises**, ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 1s. *[In print.]* ,,
21. **Merlin**, Part II., ed. H. B. Wheatley. 4s. *[In print.]* ,,
22. **Partenay or Lusignen**, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. ,,
23. **Dan Michel's Ayenbite of Inwyt**, 1340, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. 6d. *[In print.]* ,,
24. **Hymns to the Virgin and Christ; the Parliament of Devils, &c.**, ab. 1430, ed. F. J. Furnivall. [*At Press.* 1867
25. **The Stacions of Rome, the Pilgrims' Sea-voyage, with Clene Maydenhed**, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 1s. ,,
26. **Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse**, from R. Thornton's MS. (ab. 1440), ed. Rev. G. G. Perry. 2s. ,,
27. **Levins's Manipulus Vocabulorum, a rymyng Dictionary**, 1570, ed. H. B. Wheatley. 12s. ,,
28. **William's Vision of Piers the Plowman**, 1362 A.D.: Text A, Part I., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s. ,,
29. **Old English Homilies** (ab. 1220-30 A.D.): Part I. Edited by Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 7s. ,,
30. **Pierce the Ploughmans Crede**, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 2s. ,,
31. **Myrc's Duties of a Parish Priest**, in Verse, ab. 1420 A.D., ed. E. Peacock. 4s. 1868
32. **Early English Meals and Manners: the Boke of Norture of John Russell, the Bokes of Keruynge, Curtasye, and Demeanor, the Babees Book, Urbanitatis, &c.**, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 12s. ,,
33. **The Knight de la Tour Landry**, ab. 1440 A.D. A Book for Daughters, ed. T. Wright, M.A. 8s. ,,
34. **Old English Homilies** (before 1300 A.D.). Part II., ed. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s. ,,
35. **Lyndesay's Works**, Part III.: The Historie and Testament of Squyer Meldrum, ed. F. Hall. 2s. ,,

36. Merlin, Part III. Ed. H. B. Wheatley. On Arthurian Localities, by J. S. Stuart Glennie. 12s. 1869
37. Sir David Lyndesay's Works, Part IV., The Satyre of the Three Estatis. Ed. F. Hall, D.C.L. 4s. ,,
38. William's Vision of Piers the Plowman, Part II., Text B. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. 6d. ,,
39. Alliterative Romance of the Destruction of Troy. Ed. D. Donaldson & G. A. Panton. Pt. I., 10s. 6d. ,,
40. English Gilds, their Statutes and Customs, 1389 A.D. Edit. Toulmin Smith and Lucy T. Smith, with an Essay on Gilds and Trades-Unions, by Dr. L. Brentano. 21s. 1870
41. William Lauder's Minor Poems. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 5s. ,,
42. Bernardus De Cura Rei Familiaris, Early Scottish Prophecies, &c. Ed. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 2s. ,,
43. Ratis Raving, and other Moral and Religious Pieces. Ed. J. R. Lumby, M.A. 5s. ,,
44. The Alliterative Romance of Joseph of Arimathie, or The Holy Grail: from the Vernon MS.; with W. de Worde's and Pynson's Lives of Joseph: ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 5s. 1871
45. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, edited from 9 MSS., with an English translation, by Henry Sweet, Esq., B.A., Balliol College, Oxford. Part I. 10s. ,,
46. Legends of the Holy Rood, Symbols of the Passion and Cross Poems, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. ,,
47. Sir David Lyndesay's Works, Part V., ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 5s. ,,
48. The Times' Whistle, and other Poems, by R. C., 1616; ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s. ,,
49. An Old English Miscellany, containing a Bestiary, Kentish Sermons, Proverbs of Alfred, and Religious Poems of the 13th cent., ed. from the MSS. by the Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 10s. 1872
50. King Alfred's West-Saxon Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. Part II. 10s. ,,
51. The Life of St Juliana, 2 versions, A.D. 1230, with translations; ed. T. O. Cockayne & E. Brock. 2s. ,,
52. Palladius on Husbondrie, englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.), ed. Rev. Barton Lodge, M.A. Part I. 10s. ,,
53. Old-English Homilies, Series II., and three Hymns to the Virgin and God, 13th-century, with the music to two of them, in old and modern notation; ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. 8s. 1873
54. The Vision of Piers Plowman, Text C: Richard the Redeles (by William, the author of the Vision) and The Crowned King: Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 18s. ,,
55. Generydes, a Romance, ab. 1440 A.D., ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part I. 8s. ,,
56. The Gest Hystoriale of the Destruction of Troy, in alliterative verse; ed. by D. Donaldson, Esq., and the late Rev. G. A. Panton. Part II. 10s. 6d. 1874
57. The Early English Version of the "Cursor Mundi"; in four Texts, edited by the Rev. R. Morris, M.A., LL.D. Part I, with 2 photolithographic facsimiles. 10s. 6d. ,,
58. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. R. Morris, LL.D. Part I. 8s. ,,
59. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 15s. 1875
60. Meditacyuns on the Soper of our Lorde (by Robert of Brunne), edited by J. M. Cowper. 2s. 6d. ,,
61. The Romance and Prophecies of Thomas of Erceldoune, from 8 MSS.; ed. Dr. J. A. H. Murray. 10s. 6d. ,,
62. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 15s. 1876
63. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part II. 7s. ,,
64. Frauncis Thynne's Emblemes and Epigrams, A.D. 1600, ed. F. J. Furnivall. 7s. ,,
65. De Domes Dæge (Bede's *De Die Judicii*, &c., ed. J. R. Lumby, B.D. 2s. ,,
66. The "Cursor Mundi," in four Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part IV., with 2 autotypes. 10s. 1877
67. Notes on Piers Plowman, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 24s. ,,
68. The "Cursor Mundi," in 4 Texts, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part V. 25s. 1878
69. Adam Davie's 5 Dreams about Edward II., &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 5s. ,,
70. Generydes, a Romance, ed. W. Aldis Wright, M.A. Part II. 4s. ,,
71. The Lay Folks Mass-Book, four texts, ed. Rev. Canon Simmons. 25s. 1879
72. Palladius on Husbondrie, englisht (ab. 1420 A.D.). Part II. Ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15s. ,,
73. The Blickling Homilies, 971 A.D., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. Part III. 10s. 1880
74. English Works of Wyclif, hitherto unprinted, ed. F. D. Matthew, Esq. 20s. ,,
75. Catholicon Anglicum, an early English Dictionary, from Lord Monson's MS. A.D. 1483, ed., with Introduction & Notes, by S. J. Herrtage, B.A.; and with a Preface by H. B. Wheatley. 20s. 1881
76. Ælfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, in MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. Part I. 10s. ,,
77. Beowulf, the unique MS. autotyped and transliterated, edited by Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D. 25s. 1882
78. The Fifty Earliest English Wills, in the Court of Probate, 1387-1439, ed. by F. J. Furnivall, M.A. 7s. ,,
79. King Alfred's Orosius, from Lord Tollemache's 9th century MS., Part I, ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 15s. 1883
Extra Volume. Facsimile of the Epinal Glossary, 8th cent., ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 15s. ,,
80. The Early-English Life of St. Katherine and its Latin Original, ed. Dr. Einenkel. 12s. 1884
81. Piers Plowman: Notes, Glossary, &c. Part IV, completing the work, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A. 16s. ,,
82. Ælfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7., ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, M.A., LL.D. Part II. 12s. 1885
83. The Oldest English Texts, Charters, &c., ed. H. Sweet, M.A. 20s. ,,
84. Additional Analogs to 'The Wright's Chaste Wife,' No. 12, by W. A. Clouston. 1s. 1886
85. The Three Kings of Cologne. 2 English Texts, and 1 Latin, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 17s. ,,
86. Prose Lives of Women Saints, ab. 1610 A.D., ed. from the unique MS. by Dr. C. Horstmann. 12s. ,,
87. Early English Verse Lives of Saints (earliest version). Land MS. 108, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s. 1887
88. Hy. Bradshaw's Life of St. Werburghe (Pynson, 1521), ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 10s. ,,
89. Vices and Virtues, from the unique MS., ab. 1200 A.D., ed. Dr. F. Holthausen. Part I. 8s. 1888
90. Anglo-Saxon and Latin Rule of St. Benet, interlinear Glosses, ed. Dr. H. Logeman. 15s. ,,
91. Two Fifteenth-Century Cookery-Books, ab. 1430-1450, edited by Mr. T. Austin. 10s. ,,
92. Eadwine's Canterbury Psalter, from the Trin. Camb. MS., ab. 1150 A.D., ed. F. Harsley, B.A. Pt. I. 12s. 1889
93. Defensor's Liber Scintillarum, edited from the MSS. by Ernest Rhodes, B.A. 12s. ,,

94. Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7, Part III., ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. 12s. 1800
95. The Old-English version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History, re-edited by Dr. Thomas Miller. Part I. 18s. ,,
(With Reprints of No. 16, The Book of Quinte Essence, and No. 26, Religious Pieces, from R. Thornton's MS.)
96. The Old-English version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History, re-edited by Dr. Thomas Miller. Pt. II. 15s. 1891
97. The Earliest English Prose Psalter, edited from its 2 MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring. Part I. 15s. ,,
98. Minor Poems of the Vernon MS., Part I., ed. Dr. C. Horstmann. 20s. 1892
99. Cursor Mundi. Part VI. Preface, Notes, and Glossary, ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris. 10s. ,,
100. Capgrave's Life of St. Katharine, ed. Dr. C. Horstmann, with Forewords by Dr. Furnivall. 20s. 1893
101. Cursor Mundi. Part VII. Essay on the MSS., their Dialects, &c., by Dr. H. Hupe. 10s. ,,
102. Lanfranc's Cirurgie, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker. Part I. 20s. 1894
103. The Legend of the Cross, from a 12th century MS., &c., ed. Prof. A. S. Napier, M.A., Ph.D. 7s. 6d. ,,
104. The Exeter Book (Anglo-Saxon Poems), re-edited from the unique MS. by I. Gollancz, M.A. Part I. 20s. 1895
105. The Prymer or Lay-Folk's Prayer-Book, Camb. Univ. MS., ab. 1420, ed. Henry Littlehales. 10s. ,,
106. R. Misyn's Fire of Love and Mending of Life, 1434, 1435, ed. Rev. R. Harvey, M.A. 15s 1896
107. The English Conquest of Ireland, A.D. 1166-1185, 2 Texts, 1425, 1440, Pt. I., ed. Dr. Furnivall. 15s. ,,
108. Child-Marriages and -Divorces, Trothplights, &c. Chester Depositions, 1561-6, ed. Dr. Furnivall. 12s. 1897
109. Queen Elizabeth's Englishings of Boethius, Plutarch &c. &c., ed. Miss Pemberton. 18s. ,,
110. 1898
111. ,,
112. 1899

EXTRA SERIES.

The Publications for 1867-1893 (*one guinea each year*) *are*:—

I. William of Palerne; or, William and the Werwolf. Re-edited by Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 13s. 1867
II. Early English Pronunciation with especial Reference to Shakspere and Chaucer, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part I. 10s. ,,
III. Caxton's Book of Curtesye, in Three Versions. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 5s. 1868
IV. Havelok the Dane. Re-edited by the Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 10s. ,,
V. Chaucer's Boethius. Edited from the two best MSS. by Rev. Dr. R. Morris 12s. ,,
VI. Chevelere Assigne. Re-edited from the unique MS. by H. H. Gibbs, Esq., M.A. 5s. ,,
VII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part II. 10s. 1869
VIII. Queene Elizabethes Achademy, &c. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. Essays on early Italian and German Books of Courtesy, by W. M. Rossetti and Dr. E. Oswald. 13s. ,,
IX. Awdeley's Fraternitye of Vacabondes, Harman's Caveat, &c. Ed. E. Viles & F. J. Furnivall. 7s. 6d. ,,
X. Andrew Boorde's Introduction of Knowledge, 1547, Dyetary of Helth, 1542, Barnes in Defence of the Berde, 1542-3. Ed. F. J. Furnivall. 18s. 1870
XI. Barbour's Bruce, Part I. Ed. from MSS. and editions, by Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 12s. ,,
XII. England in Henry VIII.'s Time: a Dialogue between Cardinal Pole & Lupset, by Thom. Starkey, Chaplain to Henry VIII. Ed. J. M. Cowper. Part II. 12s. (Part I. is No. XXXII, 1878, 8s.) 1871
XIII. A Supplicacyon of the Beggers, by Simon Fish, 1528-9 A.D., ed. F. J. Furnivall; with A Supplication to our Moste Soureraigne Lorde; A Supplication of the Poore Commons; and The Decaye of England by the Great Multitude of Sheep, ed. by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 6s. ,,
XIV. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Part III. 10s. ,,
XV. Robert Crowley's Thirty-One Epigrams, Voyce of the Last Trumpet, Way to Wealth, &c., A.D. 1550-1, edited by J. M. Cowper, Esq. 12s. 1872
XVI. Chaucer's Treatise on the Astrolabe. Ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 6s. ,,
XVII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., with 4 Tracts (1542-48), ed. Dr. Murray. Part I. 10s. ,,
XVIII. The Complaynt of Scotlande, 1549 A.D., ed. Dr. Murray. Part II. 8s. 1873
XIX. Oure Ladyes Myroure, A.D. 1530, ed. Rev. J. H. Blunt, M.A. 24s. ,,
XX. Lonelich's History of the Holy Grail (ab. 1450 A.D.), ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part I. 8s. 1874
XXI. Barbour's Bruce, Part II., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 4s. ,,
XXII. Henry Brinklow's Complaynt of Roderyck Mors (ab. 1542); and The Lamentacion of a Christian against the Citie of London, made by Roderigo Mors, A.D. 1545. Ed. J. M. Cowper. 9s. ,,
XXIII. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, F.R.S. Part IV. 10s. ,,
XXIV. Lonelich's History of the Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part II. 10s. 1875
XXV. Guy of Warwick, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 20s. ,,
XXVI. Guy of Warwick, 15th-century Version, ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part II. 14s. 1876
XXVII. Bp. Fisher's English Works (died 1535), ed. by Prof. J. E. B. Mayor. Part I, the Text. 16s. ,,
XXVIII. Lonelich's Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part III. 10s. 1877
XXIX. Barbour's Bruce. Part III., ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat, M.A. 21s. ,,
XXX. Lonelich's Holy Grail, ed. F. J. Furnivall, M.A., Ph.D. Part IV. 15s. 1878
XXXI. The Alliterative Romance of Alexander and Dindimus, ed. Rev. W. W. Skeat. 6s. ,,
XXXII. Starkey's "England in Henry VIII's time." Pt. I. Starkey's Life and Letters, ed. S. J. Herrtage. 8s. ,,
XXXIII. Gesta Romanorum (englisht ab. 1440), ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15s. 1879
XXXIV. The Charlemagne Romances:—1. Sir Ferumbras, from Ashm. MS. 33, ed. S. J. Herrtage. 15s. ,,

XXXV. Charlemagne Romances:—2. The Sege off Melayne, Sir Otuell, &c., ed. S. J. Herrtage. 12s. 1880

XXXVI. Charlemagne Romances:—3. Lyf of Charles the Grete, Pt. I., ed. S. J. Herrtage. 10s. ,,

XXXVII. Charlemagne Romances:—4. Lyf of Charles the Grete, Pt. II., ed. S. J. Herrtage. 15s. 1881

XXXVIII. Charlemagne Romances:—5. The Sowdone of Babylone, ed. Dr. Hausknecht. 15s. ,,

XXXIX. Charlemagne Romances:—6. Rauf Coilyear, Roland, Otuel, &c., ed. S. J. Herrtage, B.A. 15s. 1882

XL. Charlemagne Romances:—7. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part I. 15s. ,,

XLI. Charlemagne Romances:—8. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt. II. 15s. 1883

XLII. Guy of Warwick: 2 texts (Auchinleck MS. and Caius MS.), ed. Prof. Zupitza. Part I. 15s. ,,

XLIII. Charlemagne Romances:—9. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Pt. III. 15s. 1884

XLIV. Charlemagne Romances:—10. The Four Sons of Aymon, ed. Miss Octavia Richardson. Pt. I. 15s. ,,

XLV. Charlemagne Romances:—11. The Four Sons of Aymon, ed. Miss O. Richardson. Pt. II. 20s. 1885

XLVI. Sir Bevis of Hamton, from the Auchinleck and other MSS., ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part I. 10s. ,,

XLVII. The Wars of Alexander, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. 20s. 1886

XLVIII. Sir Bevis of Hamton, ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part II. 10s. ,,

XLIX. Guy of Warwick, 2 texts (Auchinleck and Caius MSS.), Pt. II., ed. Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D. 15s. 1887

L. Charlemagne Romances:—12. Huon of Burdeux, by Lord Berners, ed. S. L. Lee, B.A. Part IV. 5s. ,,

LI. Torrent of Portyngale, from the unique MS. in the Chetham Library, ed. E. Adam, Ph.D. 10s. ,,

LII. Bullein's Dialogue against the Feuer Pestilence, 1578 (ed. 1, 1564). Ed. M. & A. H. Bullen. 10s. 1888

LIII. Vicary's Anatomie of the Body of Man, 1548, ed. 1577, ed. F. J. & Percy Furnivall. Part I. 15s. ,,

LIV. Caxton's Englishing of Alain Chartier's Curial, ed. Dr. F. J. Furnivall & Prof. P. Meyer. 5s. ,,

LV. Barbour's Bruce, ed. Rev. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D. Part IV. 5s. 1889

LVI. Early English Pronunciation, by A. J. Ellis, Esq., F.R.S. Pt. V., the present English Dialects. 25s. ,,

LVII. Caxton's Eneydos, A.D. 1490, coll. with its French, ed. M. T. Culley, M.A. & Dr. F. J. Furnivall. 15s. 1890

LVIII. Caxton's Blanchardyn & Eglantine, c. 1489, extracts from ed. 1595, & French, ed. Dr. L. Kellner. 17s. ,,

LIX. Guy of Warwick, 2 texts (Auchinleck and Caius MSS.), Part III., ed. Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D. 15s. 1891

LX. Lydgate's Temple of Glass, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. J. Schick. 15s. ,,

LXI. Hoccleve's Minor Poems, I., from the Phillipps and Durham MSS., ed. F. J. Furnivall, Ph.D. 15s. 1892

LXII. The Chester Plays, re-edited from the MSS. by the late Dr. Hermann Deimling. Part I. 15s. ,,

LXIII. Thomas a Kempis's De Imitatione Christi, englisht ab. 1440, & 1502, ed. Prof. J. K. Ingram. 15s. 1893

LXIV. Caxton's Godfrey of Boloyne, or Last Siege of Jerusalem, 1481, ed. Dr. Mary N. Colvin. 15s. ,,

LXV. Sir Bevis of Hamton, ed. Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D. Part III. 15s. 1894

LXVI. Lydgate's and Burgh's Secrees of Philisoffres, ab. 1445—50, ed. R. Steele, B.A. 15s. ,,

LXVII. The Three Kings' Sons, a Romance, ab. 1300, Part I., the Text, ed. Dr. Furnivall. 10s. 1895

LXVIII. Melusine, the prose Romance, ab. 1500, Part I., the Text, ed. A. K. Donald. 20s. ,,

LXIX. Melusine, the Prose Romance, ab. 1500, Part II., Introduction by A. K. Donald. 1896

LXX. Promptorium Parvulorum, c. 1440, from the Winchester MS., ed. Rev. A. L. Mayhew, M.A. ,,

LXXI. Lydgate's Assembly of the Gods, ed. Prof. Oscar L. Triggs, Ph.D. 1897

LXXII. The Townsley Plays, ed. G. Gregory England and A. W. Pollard, M.A. ,,

---

EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY TEXTS PREPARING.

Besides the Texts named as at press on p. 12 of the Cover of the Early English Text Society's last books, the following Texts are also slowly preparing for the Society:—

ORIGINAL SERIES.

Thomas Robinson's Life and Death of Mary Magdalene, from the 2 MSS., ab. 1620 A.D. (*Text in type.*)
The Earliest English Prose Psalter, ed. Dr. K. D. Buelbring. Part II.
Anglo-Saxon Poems, from the Vercelli MS., re-edited by I. Gollancz, M.A.
Anglo-Saxon Glosses to Latin Prayers and Hymns, edited by Dr. F. Holthausen.
Aelfric's Metrical Lives of Saints, MS. Cott. Jul. E 7. Part IV, ed. Prof. Skeat, Litt.D., LL.D.
All the Anglo-Saxon Homilies and Lives of Saints not accessible in English editions, including those of the Vercelli MS. &c., edited by Prof. Napier, M.A., Ph.D.
The Anglo-Saxon Psalms; all the MSS. in Parallel Texts, ed. Dr. H. Logeman and F. Harsley, B.A.
Beowulf, a critical Text, &c., ed. Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
Byrhtferth's Handboc, edited by Prof. G. Hempl.
The Secret of Secrets, 3 prose versions from MSS., 2 at Lambeth, and one by Jas. Yonge, 1428, ed. R. Steele, B.A.
The Rule of St. Benet: 5 Texts, Anglo-Saxon, Early English, Caxton, &c., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.
The Seven Sages, in the Northern Dialect, from a Cotton MS., ed. Rev. Dr. R. Morris.
The Master of the Game, a Book of Huntynge for Hen. V. when Prince of Wales, ed. Mr. T. Austin.
Alfred's Rule of Nuns, &c., edited from the Vernon MS., by the Rev. Canon H. R. Bramley, M.A.
Lonelich's Merlin (verse), from the unique MS., ed. by Miss Mary Bateson and Prof. E. Kölbing, Ph.D.
Merlin (prose), Part IV., containing Preface, Index, and Glossary. Edited by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D.
Early English Verse Lives of Saints, Standard Collection, from the Harl. MS.
Early English Confessionals, edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
A Lapidary, from Lord Tollemache's MS., &c., edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.

Early English Deeds and Documents, from unique MSS., ed. Dr. Lorenz Morsbach.
Gilbert Banastre's Poems, and other Boccaccio englishings, edited by Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D.
Lanfranc's Cirurgie, ab. 1400 A.D., ed. Dr. R. von Fleischhacker, Part II.
William of Nassington's Mirror of Life, from Jn. of Waldby. (*Editor Wanted.*)
A Chronicle of England to 1327 A.D., Northern verse (42,000 lines), ab. 1400 A.D., ed. M. L. Ferrin, B.A.
More Early English Wills from the Probate Registry at Somerset House. (*Editor Wanted.*)
Early Lincoln Wills and Documents from the Bishops' Registers, &c., edited by Dr. F. J. Furnivall.
Early Canterbury Wills, edited by William Cowper, B.A., and J. Meadows Cowper.
Early Norwich Wills, edited by Walter Rye, and F. J. Furnivall.
The Cartularies of Oseney Abbey and Godstow Nunnery, englisht ab. 1450, ed. Rev. A. Clark, M.A.
The Macro Moralities, edited from Mr. Gurney's unique MS., by Alfred W. Pollard, M.A.
A Troy-Book, edited from the unique Land MS. 595, by Dr. E. Wülfing.
Alliterative Prophecies, edited from the MSS. by Prof. Brandl, Ph. D.
Miscellaneous Alliterative Poems, edited from the MSS. by Dr. L. Morsbach.
Bird and Beast Poems, a collection from MSS., edited by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Seinte Meri, &c., from the Lichfield MS. 16, ed. Miss Rosa Elverson, LL.A., and Miss Florence Gilbert.
Nicholas Trivet's French Chronicle, from Sir A. Acland-Hood's unique MS., ed. by Miss Mary Bateson.
De Guilleville's Pilgrimage of the Sowle, edited by G. N. Currie, M.A.
Stories for Sermons, edited from the Addit. MS. 25,719 by Dr. Wieck of Coblentz.
A 15th Century Treatise on Arithmetic, edited by Robert Steele, B.A.
Extracts from the Registers of Boughton, ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq.
Jacob's Well, from a Salisbury Cathedral MS., ed. Hy. Littlehales, Esq.
The Diary of Prior Moore of Worcester, A.D. 1518-35, from the unique MS., ed. Dr. A. Brandeis.
The pore Caitif, from its MSS., ed. Henry Littlehales, Esq.
Early English Homilies in Harl. 2276 &c., c. 1400, ed. J. Friedländer.

EXTRA SERIES.

Vicary's Anatomie, 1548, ed. 1577, edited by F. J. & Percy Furnivall. Part II. (*At Press.*
Bp. Fisher's English Works, Pt. II., with his Life and Letters, ed. Rev. Ronald Bayne, B.A. (*At Press.*
William Staunton's St. Patrick's Purgatory, &c., ed. J. T. Herbert, M.A.
A Parallel-text of the 6 MSS. of the Ancren Riwle, ed. Prof. Dr. E. Kölbing.
Trevisa's Bartholomæus de Proprietatibus Rerum, re-edited by Dr. R. von Fleischhacker.
Bullein's Dialogue against the Fever Pestilence, 1564, 1573, 1578. Ed. A. H. and M. Bullen. Pt. II.
The Romance of Boeve and Sidrac, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
The Romance of Clariodus, re-edited by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Sir Amadas, re-edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Sir Degrevant, edited from the MSS. by Dr. K. Luick.
Robert of Brunne's Chronicle of England, from the Inner Temple MS., ed. by Prof. W. E. Mead, Ph.D.
Maundeville's Voiage and Travelle, re-edited from the Cotton MS. Titus C. 16, &c., by Miss M. Bateson.
Arthour and Merlin, re-edited from the unique MS. by Dr. K. D. Buelbring.
Guy of Warwick, Copland's version, edited by Prof. Zupitza, Ph.D.
The Sege of Jerusalem, Text A, edited from the MSS. by Dr. F. Kopka.
Liber Fundacionis Ecclesie Sancti Bartholomei Londoniarum: englisht ab. 1425, ed. Norman Moore, M.D.
Awdelay's Poems, re-edited from the unique MS. Douce 302, by Dr. E. Wülfing.
William of Shoreham's Works, re-edited by Professor Konrath, Ph.D.
The Wyse Chylde and other early Treatises on Education, Northwich School, Harl. 2399 &c., ed. G. Collar, B.A.
Caxton's Dictes and Sayengis of Philosophirs, 1477, with Lord Tollemache's MS. version, ed. S. T. Butler, Esq.
Caxton's Book of the Ordre of Chyualry, collated with Lonfut's Scotch copy, ed. F. S. Ellis, Esq.
Lydgate's Court of Sapience, edited by Dr. Borsdorf.
Lydgate's Life of our Lady, ed. by Prof. Georg Fiedler, Ph.D.
Lydgate's Reason and Sensuality, edited by Dr. J. Schick.
Lydgate's Life of St. Edmund, edited from the MSS. by Dr. Axel Erdmann.
Jn. Hart's Orthographie, MS. 1551; black and fonetic letters, 1569, ed. Dr. Otto Jespersen.
Richard Coer de Lion, re-edited from Harl. MS. 4690, by Prof. Hausknecht, Ph.D.
The Romance of Athelston, re-edited by Prof. J. Zupitza, Ph.D.
The Romance of Sir Degare, re-edited by Dr. Breul.
Mulcaster's Positions 1581, and **Elementarie** 1582, ed. Dr. Th. Klaehr, Dresden.
Caxton's Recuyell of the Historyes of Troye, edited by H. Halliday Sparling.

The Society is anxious to hear of more early Dialect MSS. John Lacy's copy, in the Newcastle-on-Tyne dialect, 1434, of some theological tracts in MS. 94 of St. John's College, Oxford, is to be edited by Prof. McClintock. More Hampoles in the Yorkshire dialect will follow. Many instances of the Irish *d* and *t* for *th*, &c., are in the Dublin MS. of *The English Conquest of Ireland* now at press, ed. Dr. Furnivall. The Lincoln and Norfolk Wills, already copied by or for Dr. Furnivall, unluckily show but little traces of dialect.

More members (to bring money) and Editors (to bring brains) are wanted by the Society.

941.52
Fux | Eng
L15440

00045440

The English Conquest of Ireland.

A. D. 1166–1185.

MAINLY FROM THE 'EXPUGNATIO HIBERNICA' OF GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS.

A Parallel Text

FROM

1. MS. Trinity College, Dublin, E. 2. 31, about 1425 A.D.
2. MS. Rawlinson, B. 490, Bodleian Library, about 1440 A.D.

PART I. THE TEXT.

EDITED BY

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.,

TRINITY HALL, CAMBRIDGE, HON. DR. PHIL., BERLIN.

45440

LONDON:

PUBLISHT FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,

BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED

PATERNOSTER HOUSE, CHARING CROSS ROAD, W.C.

M DCCC XCVI.

Oxford
HORACE HART, PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

Original Series.
107

The English Conquest of Ireland.

DEDICATED TO THE

RT. HON. WILLIAM EWART GLADSTONE, M.P.

AND ALL WHO HAVE WORKT FOR

Justice to Ireland

See opposite. Mr. Thomas Austin sends me some more forms worth notice in the Dublin MS.:—bethweñ, between, 10/12; bolthenys, boldness, 75/15; ather, either, 100/3; ayse, ease, 148/1; behoud (? th), behoof, benefit, 112/30; culuertnesse, falseness, 126/31; cytteyns, citizens, 122/27; durr̃, door, 42/22; ense, ends, 80/29; fale (fele), many, 74/10; fobler, feebler, 68/6; forume, form, 39/12; ? heuedes (as in note), 14/17; hym þriddesum, Greek *αὐτος τριτος*, 14/1, 32/20; I-shwerne, sworn, 24/26; mich yuell, leprosy (comp. great pox), 32/7; neyght, nigh, 74/16; pynsynge (pinching), affliction, 88/6; rechest, reckest, 108/9; ruthlynge, ? rattling, 16/13; schavnge, change, 51/6; senne, synod, 120/15; senthe (? seūthe), seventh, 58/30; senfte, 59/30; soine, soon, 60/11; soldrys, shoulders, 89/11; sortely, shortly, 149/22; shechynge, seeking, 147/19.

FOREWORDS.

THE first manuscript of this interesting story of "oure knyghten gestes yn Irlande" (92/15), and of Henry II's Conquest of our sister Isle, was sent over to me from the Library of Trinity College, Dublin, by Dr. John K. Ingram, to be copied, printed, and edited by him for the Early English Text Society. He hoped to do his work at it during his July–September holiday (1893) in Scotland, on Loch Lomond, I having read his proofs with the MS. for him. But illness prevented him; and so I (as the Society's man-of-all-work) had to take the book up. Both the story told—mainly, though freely, from the *Expugnacio Hibernica* of Giraldus Cambrensis,—and the forms of the words, interested me. For the copier of the englisht text has often slipt into his own Irish dialect, specially in the use of *d* and *t* for *th*, and has written *dynge*[1] and *tynge*[2] for *thing*; *drogh*[3] and *trogh*[4] for *through*; *dey* for *they*[5]; *idrow* (18/1) for *thrown*; *tanked* for *thanked* (14/19); *tynke* for *think* (6/26); *toght* for *thought* (16/25, 18/7); *tough* (as once in *The Three King's Sons*) for *though* (22/14); &c. At the same time he has used *th* for *t* and *d*: *thedynge* (10/7) and *tythynge* (6/15) for *tidings*; *onther* (6/31) for *under*; *reut* (8/1) for *ruth*; *bethwen* (10/12) for *between*; *thwey* (12/35) for *two*; *herth* (2/8, 13, 22/28) for *heart*; *ibansheth* (24/1) for *banisht*; *Iendeth* (22/16) for *ended*; *smyth* (24/12) for *smite*, &c. The copier has other peculiarities, both in the use of other consonants and vowels[6], which the reader will note as he goes along, and which will be collected for him in the Introduction by Dr. Douglas Bruce, of the Ladies College at Bryn Mawr, Philadelphia, that will form

[1] 88/27; 134/13. [2] 24/14; 28/8; (no)tynge 8/12; 16/5; 20/9; &c. [3] 14/8. [4] 22/6, 7; 26/1, &c. [5] 10/19; 12/21; 24/10, 11. [6] *Both har'* 128/20 doesn't at first look like *But ere*: still, you soon get accustomd to the scribe's little weaknesses. *Harym*, harm, is in the Rawlinson MS. 143/12: cp. *sarrif* serve, in Misyn. E. E. T. Soc. The Southern infinitive in *-y* or *-ye* occurs in both MSS. 58/27, &c. For other odd spellings, see opposite.

Part II. of this book, when complete, and will no doubt be finisht in 1894, or '95.

As it was now and then hard to understand the Dublin text, and one nearer the standard tongue turnd up in the Rawlinson MS. B. 490—the MS. that contains one of Mr. Steele's text of the prose *Secreta*—I got Mrs. Parker to copy this Bodleian MS.[1], and the Clarendon Press to set it opposite the Dublin one. The comparison of the two versions is full of interesting points, as the Rawlinson is generally less archaic than the Dublin[2], while each helps to fill up the other's occasional leavings-out. There is at least one other MS. of the *Conquest*, the later one in Trinity College, Dublin, F. 4. 4, which is said to be a 16th century transcript of E. 2. 31. From it, an extract is given below, pp. xiv–xvi as a specimen. Doubtless, other MSS. of the text exist elsewhere. Luckily for us, the late Rev. Jas. F. Dimock re-edited the *Expugnatio Hibernica* in vol. v. (1867) *Giraldi Cambrensis Opera* in the Rolls Series of *Chronicles and Memorials*; and his notes, dates, and Preface have been of the greatest use to me. He says (p. xxix) that there are two editions, and perhaps a third, of the *Expugnacio*: (1) that in an early 13th century MS. at Lambeth, No. 371, "probably penned during Giraldus's lifetime" (p. xxxi), and in (R.) and (B.), MSS. Bibl. Reg. 13 B. viii in the British Museum, and Rawlinson B. 188 in the Bodleian. In treating the two latter MSS. as of the first cast of the work, Mr. Dimock neglects the marginal additions of the Royal MS. These additions make (2) the second version of the *Expugnacio* (pp. xxxii, xxxiv), shown in (R.), and MS. Ff. 1. 27, in the University Library, Cambridge, in which "there is one whole chapter, (also in our English, p. 38–40 below) the eighteenth of the first book—giving the account of the synod at Armagh in 1170, of which no other mention is known besides this,

[1] Mr. George Parker has collated the proofs with the MS. Mr. Thomas Austin has made the Glossary and Indexes to both Texts. Dr. Ingram wrote the English side-notes to the even pages 10-32, tho I've alterd 2 or 3 of em.

[2] I suppose the first englishing now represented by the Dublin MS. was made in the 14th century.

in this chapter of Giraldus—which is not in Lambeth 371, but is in Bibl. Reg. 13 B. viii and Rawlinson B. 188."

We now come to the MS. of most interest to us, Harleian 177, for in it only (as I gather from Mr. Dimock's note 3, p. 236) is the original of one of our English bits on pp. 16, 18 below:—

Trin. Coll. Dublin, E. 2. 31.

A wonder was of that fantasye: A-morowe, whan it was day, the place ther this folk iseye smyten vpon ham, the wedes and the grase that stoden al euen vpright, thay lay alle idrow adoune, and icast to grond.

Harl. 117, lf. 14, bk. 15.

Mirum autem fantasmate tali, quod in crastino die clarescente, in loco ubi uidebatur exercitus ille in ipsos irruisse, herbe & vrtice, que prius alte fuerant, & erecte, solotenus prostrate iacebant, & complanate.

For this, the other MSS., R. and B., have "primus hic miles, qui in hac insula niso mansueto et domesticato Nisi filiam infestavit."

On this Harleian 177, Mr. Dimock says, at p. xxxv of his Preface:

(it) "furnishes a copy of the *Expugnatio* which, so far as it goes,—it has many and large omissions—generally agrees closely with the text of this second edition. . . . The omissions are more especially of the extraneous matter, not relating to Ireland; but there is much curtailing also of Irish matter, when not directly historical. In the descriptions of the heroes, for instance, much often is left out; and in the orations which Giraldus puts into their mouths, still more. The compiler of it never condenses, but simply omits. In an oration . . . he will retain two or three sentences of the beginning, and two or three more of the end, with perhaps another or two out of the middle, if not very much less than all this, word for word as in the complete oration, without much care about connection or sense . . . it certainly is only an abbreviation, such as I describe it."

This is just the case with our English text[1], though here and there it has bits not in Harl. 177. As to that MS., Mr. Dimock continues, pp. xxxv–vi:

"It generally agrees closely, as I have said, with the second

[1] It stops at chapter 34 of Book II (75 of our pages go to 171 of the Roll *Giraldus*).

edition, as in (R.) and (F.); but it exhibits a somewhat more advanced text. For instance, the word *Stadia* of (L)ambeth MS. occurs only twice instead of four times, out of eight as in (R)awlinson MS.: and instead of *Arcarii* always, as in the early manuscripts, it has the *Satellites equestres* of the later ones, in about half the instances where the words occur. And, moreover, in a few instances, it has a word or two that are not in the early manuscripts, but are in the later ones.

This manuscript has no note whatever as to its history; but it, or its original perhaps, would seem to have been written by one of the English settlers in Ireland, as it attempts occasionally, instead of Giraldus's Latin of all the other manuscripts, to give an English rendering of the Irish names. Thus, instead of *Murchardi filius*, or *Dermitius*, or *Murchardides*, it has 'Macmorthit' or 'Macmorhith'; instead of *Ororicius*, 'Oroch.' In one instance the writer appears to make a blunder in his Englishing: he renders *Otuethelis* 'Oneyl' instead of O'Toole. . . . It is not the work of a very correct scribe."

As a sample of the cutting-down, by Harl. 177, of Giraldus's descriptions of men, take the most trenchant instance, that of Henry II. In the Rolls edition, this description takes nearly six big octavo pages, *Op.* v. 301–6, the whole of Chapter 46, Book I. Leaving out the first page, Harl. 177 and the englisher start with the second, p. 302:

Expugn. Hibern. lib. i. cap. xlvi.
Harl. MS. 177, lf. 44, bk. 45.

Descripsio anglorum regis Henrici secundi.

Erat *igitur* anglorum rex, henricus secundus, uir sub-ruffus, cesius; amplo capite & rotundo; oculis glausis; ad iram toruis, & rubore suffusis; facie ignea; uoce quassa; cŏllo ab humeris aliquantulum demisso; pectore quadrato; brachiis ualidis; corpore carnoso; Et nature magis, quam gule

Dubl. MS. E. 2. 31.
Page 88 below.

The kynge henry the other, was a mañ saunrede, roune heed, & round grey egheñ; roghly lokynge, & rede yn wreth; vysage rede bernynge, grete speche, neke somdel logh of þe sholdres, brest thyk, armes

uicio, cit*r*a timore*m* [*read* tumorem] enorme*m* & torpore*m* o*n*ne*m*; mode*r*ata qua*d*am i*m*mode*r*a*n*cia ue*n*tre pera*m*plo. Erat *e*ni*m* cibo potuq*ue* modest*us* ac sobrius, & pa*r*simo*n*ie quo-ad p*r*incipi licuit, pe*r* o*m*nia dat*us*.

staluarthe, of flesshy body; &, more of kynde than of glotony, grete of wombe; for he was, as to prynce belongeth, [of] mete, & of drynke ful meen & forberynge; . . . .

[*Here a page and a quarter of the full text, Op.* v. 302–3, *is left out by Harl.* 177, *though our englisher gives a little of it*[1].]

Vrgentib*us* i*n*comodis, nemo benignior: resu*m*pta secu*r*itate, nemo rigidior. Acer i*n* [in]domitos; clemen*s* i*n* su*b*actos; D*u*r*us* i*n* domesticos; diffusus i*n* extraneos; larg*us* i*n* publico; parc*us* i*n* p*r*iuato.

Whan any vnhappes hym befelle, noman meker; efte whan he was yn sekernesse, no man sterner. Suert ayeyn the bold, meke wyth ham that weren vnder y-broght, hard amonge hys owne, & p*r*iuely large amonge vnkouth.

[1] Et ut hanc naturae injuriam industria reprimeret ac mitigaret . . . . immoderata corpus vexatione torquebat . . . . sibi nec pacem ullam nec requiem indulgebat. Venationi namque trans modestiam deditus, summo diluculo equo cursore transvectus, nunc saltus lustrans, nunc silvas penetrans, nunc montium juga transcendens, dies ducebat inquietos: vespere vero domi receptum, vel ante coenam vel post, rarissime sedentem conspexeris. Post tantas namque fatigationes, totam statione continua curiam lassare consueverat.

&, for to a-quenche that gretnesse, he put hymself to ful mych trauaylle, that wnneth he lete hys body haue eny reste, ether by day other by nyght; ffor, wynter & somer, he arose euer more yn the dawnynge, & herd fyrst hys seruyce of holy chyrch; ther-aftyr, most what al þe day he wold ben out, other wyth houndes other wyth hawkes, for yn thay two thynges he delyted hym swyth mych wythal; & vnnethe he wold ryde any amblynge hors, bot myche trottynge hors, for to trauaylle hys body the more. Aftyr al hys trauaylle a-day, vnnethe he lete hys body haue a lytell reste for to syte to hys mete the whyle that he eete; & anoon aftyr mete, & namely aftyr soppere, anoon he wold aryse & stonde, & so dryue forth al þe meste parte of the nyght, so that al þe court was oft ennyede ther-of.

Quem semel exosum habuerat, uix in amorem; Quem semel amauerat, uix in odium reuocabat.	þe man that he ones hated, vnnethe he wold euer eft loue; & man that he ones loued, vnneth he wold euer eft hate.
[*Two-thirds of a page of the full text is here left out, on Henry's "extreme delight in falconry and hunting; his open violation of his marriage-vow; his untruthfulness; his dilatoriness in matters of justice; his simoniacal practises; his love of peace; his almsgiving, humility, &c.*"]	
Humilitatis amator; nobilitatis oppressor, & superbie calcator.	& openly mekenesse & debonerte he louede; pryde & hauteynesse, he hated, & wold brynge vnder fote.
[*Nearly two pages of the full text are here left out, on Henry's "usurpations in things of God; his inattention to divine service; his seizures of the revenues of vacant churches; his treatment of his sons; his wonderful memory," &c., &c.—and Harl. 177 begins again with the final paragraph, of which it gives the first sentence, and the last six words.*]	
sed haec [h]actenus, nec preter rem tamen, cursim & breuiter hic delibasse sufficiat. [*11 words of print left out.*] ad nostram de cetero hiberniam reuertamur.	[*not englisht.*]

It is not my business to follow up this question of our

englisher's original. Dr. Bruce will, I hope, do that. I note only what I have just seen, that Mr. Dimock printed part of our Dublin MS., E. 2. 31, in five pages (on six) of his vol. v., pp. xciii–xcviii [1], our pp. 2–10, to line 14, 'prince of wales'; and that from this part, he said (p. lxxvii) our MS. "seems rather a paraphrase of such portions of the treatise [*Expugnacio*] as the writer, no doubt an Anglo-Hibernian [2], deemed most worthy the notice of Anglo-Hibernian readers"; while Prof. Earle held it "a truly interesting specimen of fifteenth century English" well worthy of publication.

Why didn't one of these excellent folk write to me about it at the time?

F. J. FURNIVALL.

MS. Room, British Museum,
28 *September*, 1893.

On the authority of Giraldus, Mr. Dimock comments on pages lxxx–lxxxii of his Preface, and thus concludes:

"Recent Irish scholars have quietly received Giraldus for what he is worth, as an impetuous, strongly biassed writer, whose statements have generally more or less of truth in them, but with much unfair one-sidedness. They have seen that his abuse is not confined to Ireland and the Irish, but is almost equally as fully lavished upon his own Wales and the Welsh; that, in fact, he has praise for scarcely any thing or body except himself and his near friends and relations. Some late Irish writers, under the reaction perhaps of his having been found too much fault with, seem to me to put more faith in Giraldus's history than it really deserves."

[1] His 'blethcher,' xcvi/13, is the MS. 'blethelier,' 6/14 below; his 'foden,' xcvii/7 from foot, is the MS. 'fondene,' 8/28; his 'with,' xciv/19, is the MS. 'swith' very, 4/3 below; his 'onenth' (half), xcv/2, is the MS. 'euerich,' 4/16; his 'ichaushed,' xcv/23, is the MS. 'ibanshed,' 4/34 below; his 'inewed,' xcviii/17, is the MS. 'meued' moved, 10/12 below; and so on. The copier, Mr. J. P. Prendergast, didn't know his MS.

[2] And evidently a strong Churchman. See how he makes Henry II attend church-service daily 86/27, when Giraldus complains of his neglect of services. Other instances occur of like bits not in Giraldus.

SAMPLE OF THE LATER MS.

F. 4. 4, Trinity College, Dublin, p. 7 (middle of page).

For comparison with Chapter XIII of the other MSS, pp. 30–35 *below.*

When the kinge did knowe his entent, and whether he would goe, he gave him fullỳ leve, and warned him not. but with such leave as he hadde, he dighte and made him readỳ the wỳnter, till the begininge of maỳ, he sente before him into Irelande a knighte that was called Reymonde le gras;—with him, tenn knights, and fortỳe Squiers, and fourescore bowemen;—a man full hardỳ, and well proved in weapon; Roberts nephewe, and Morices Eldeste brothers sone. Theỳ arrỳved at a place called Dondoneuile, foure myle besouthe the hawen of Waterforde; and there theỳ arrearede a diche, and a feble castell upon, of yards and turues [? MS. iureus]. The men of Waterforde, and with them Malaughlỳne Ofolane, theỳ did understande that theỳ had such Neighbourehede which them lothed: theỳ concluded that theỳ would upon them, or enny more weare to them come. theỳ assembled them together, well thre thowsande men, and wente over the water of sure, that partethe the twoe counties of leỳnester and of Mounester, and sett them in thre hosts, bouldelỳ for to assaile the Englỳshmen within there Castell. Reỳmounde and his men, thoughe theỳ weare but fewe, theỳ weare not fainte to fighte with uneven hoste, theỳ assemblede them together; But, as noe wonder was, soe fewe men mighte nat fighte againste soe manỳ; theie turned them againe to there receipte. the other, thinkinge that theỳ departed in discomfeture, theỳ brake there sheldrun, and followed them: and theỳ weare not fullỳ within the gate, but some of them weare rather in [than] thenglỳshe men. Reymonde sawe that he and his weare in greate perill, and upon pointe to losse there lỳves. he cried to his fellowes, and turned worthelỳ upon there foemen. and the firste that came in, he clave his hedde, and throwlỳ killed him: all thoste

weare dyscomfitted, and toke them to flighte. The others them followed into all the plaine, and layde them one soe, that in litle while they slowe of them fyve hundreth and moe; and the moste parte of thother fell downe into the see from the hie roke, and drowne themselves. in this fighte, was a knighte that heighte William fferande, that did over well, and above all other. he was a man that hade semblante as thoughe he weare one the much yuell; and therfore he put him-selfe whear the moste perill was; for [he] raughte not whether death came betwen him and his yuell, or it weare overmuch smitte [? MS. suirtte] upon him. here the pride of Waterforde fell; all there mighte went to noughte: herof came the Englyshe hoppe and comforte; and to the Irishe, dredd and wanhop; for it was never therbefore harde, that, of soe fewe men, soe greate a slaughter was done. but unwise counsaile they did thereafter, that turned them to much crueltie; ffor when the Maystry was all thers, and all there foemen overcom, In the fighte weare taken well threscore men and tenn, that them had yelded, and weare the higheste and the richeste men of all the Cytty, such that theye mighte have had the Citty deliuered for them, or els asmuch Catell as they woulde desire. Henry of mountud, that to them was come, and Reymounde, upon diuerse domes stroven whate they shoulde doe with there prisoners; ffor Reymounde travailede aboute for to deliuer them, as a man of Rewthefull mode, and thus saide to his fellowes: "Lordings, whate is us beste to doe with oure wreched prisoners? I saye nat that one anny manner one shoulde spare his foemen; but they be nat nowe oure foemene, but be men nat rebells, but in Battaile for to defende there county, overcome. me thinke they are nowe in such state, that we oughte better to have mercye of them, and gyve them lyfe,—for to gyve others example to be boxom,—then cruely to doe them to deathe, whearethroughe others, ffor feare of mystruste, the lesse will yeld them to us." When Reymonde had theise wourds saide, in all the folke was amoste none to graunte them lyfe; Arose up Henry amonge

them all, and this them saide: "I-nought Remounde openly to us hathe spoken of mercy and almosedede, [1]how vnked[1] landes are wonne; and not with slaughter and burneinge. whether Alixandr and Julius Cesar, that weare lords of all the wourde, wonne lands by such way, I woulde Reymounde woulde me answere. when they came to us well arrayed for to fighte, yf theie had wone the overhande and overcome us, woulde they, for almose and for rewth, haue had mercy one us? noe, I trowe not. therfore, but those one of twoe wayes: eyther doe manly that thinge whea[re]fore we bene come, and the folke that rebell againste us, with [out] any noyse, with weapone heartely bringe owt of dawes; otherwise, yf we shall doe almose-dede one them, and spare them, as Reymounde hath saide, lett us wend to oure shippes, and turne agayne; and lett we the wreched men houlde there lande, and Brouke it, without any challendge." Henries dome licked them better then Reymonds;" and the Cittizens weare demed to death. They had noe wonte of waritrees; and therfore They ladd them to the clyffe of the see, and putt them downe, and drowned them.

of the firste goode adventure that him befell, they that beste weare worthye should haue there parte, and the hoste. all the towne of wexforde, with the twoe nexte countyes, he gave to Roberte Stephensson and to Morÿce fitz Geraude, as forwarde was to-for made. other twoe nexte counties, he gaue to Henry of Mountmorthie,—nexte thay twoe, one the syde towarde waterforde,—a knighte that came in that same flote, hym þridsome of knights, and came throughe thearle Richarde, more for to spye the land, then for to fighte.

[1—1] Afterwards written above the line in MS.

CORRECTIONS BY HENRY BRADLEY, M.A.

FOR

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND.

EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY. No. 107.

Original Series, 1896.

Boxom-fastines 62/18: this should be two words, buxom fastness, an obsequious covenant, meant to render L. *fucato foedere*.

Costes: part of **far-costes** below.

Ense 80/29: read **Euse**, eaves, edge, border: 'the wode evese (*ms.* hevese voc. 159.'—Bradley's Stratmann.

Far-costes 80/5: 'O.N. **farkostr**; means of conveyance, boat, ship, *Engl. Metr. Hom.* xix.'—*ib.*

Fawes 96/2: perhaps the Irish **fogha** (O'Reilly), a dart, O.Ir. **fogae** (Lat. jacula).

Folk place 50/15: the **folk** (for **febyll** in the Rawlinson MS.) was caught from the 'lond-**folk**' in the next line.

Herrer 116/30: the Latin is 'et citra majoris auctoritatem urbem obtenturum.'—Gir. *Cambr. Op.* v. 342.

I-quenyted 36/35: miswritten for **Iquemed**, pleased.

I-suywed 116/9: read **I-snywed**, 'snowed' their arrows; the Latin is 'sagittarum . . . grandine perfuso.'

Lygne 102/17: as **fayre & lygne** translates 'procerus et pulcher,' the word must mean 'tall'; perhaps it is a misreading for **hyghe**, high.

Lyme 62/18: the Latin has *amorem*; the scribe must have misread luue love) as *lime*, and transcribed it *lyme*.

Ost 50/2: cannot mean 'burnt.' The word is superfluous; perhaps the translator at first wrote **lytell ost** (little host), and then altered *ost* into *stonwal*, but did not clearly enough expunge the rejected word.

Priuisant 80/28: cannot mean 'foreseeing'; it is probably a mistake for **pursiuant**, pursuivant (the Latin is *satelles*).

Ryuely 128/12: rifely, abundantly.

Sheldrun 31/29 (R): company-formation, O.E. **scild-truma** (whence *shelter*); the Rawlinson MS. here preserves the right reading, that of the Dublin MS. being unmeaning.

Spourges 112/3: ? for **spronges**, shoots, sprouts.

þorwe 28/12: ? through; **wel þorwe** 'well through,' urgently (the Latin is 'omnibus modis').

Trukked 48/9: ran short, **trukien**, O.E. **trucian**, fail, be lacking.

Wecchene 36/31: **cwecchen**, to twitch, shake.

Wenttene 106/8: for **weten**, know (**þat is to weten** = that is to say); the scribe was misled by seeing **wentten** (went) in the line above.

Yonre 104/10: **Youre** 114/27: **yovre**, **ȝeofre**, O. E. **ȝifre**, greedy.

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND

FOUNDED ON THE *EXPUGNACIO HIBERNICA* OF GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS

A PARALLEL TEXT

FROM TWO MSS., I. AB. 1425 A.D. MS. TRIN. COLL., DUBLIN, E. 2. 31;
II. AB. 1440 A.D. MS. RAWLINSON B. 490, BODLEIAN LIBRARY, OXFORD

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND

FOUNDED ON

GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS.

(*MS. Trin. Coll., Dublin*, E. 2. 31.)

[CHAPTER I.]

[Fol. 1 a.] When Henry II reigned in England, Dermot Macmurgh ruled over Leinster, A. D. 1135–71.

YN the tym that the kynge henry, þat was the kynges fadyr Richard & the kynges fadyr Iohñ, regned in englaund' well, & [1] heighe mañ in Irland', þat het dermod *Mac*morgh, *pr*inces of leynyst*er*, that is I-told' þe fifte p*ar*te of Irland. That dermod', from the tym̃ that he was lord' of lond', & foll shold' gou*er*ne, he went amo*n*ge his heighe meñ, and' so hard' hañ biladde þat þay casten grete hat to hym̃, and' myche thay wax hym̃ ageyñ in

His folk hated him;

herth [2], þegh þey ne durst nat oppenly shewe. Whañ he hade longe whill þus bilad' hym̃ amonge his meñ, bettidde an aduenture that turnede hym̃ þ*er*-aftyr to mych harme; ffor in mythe was a kynge that hegth Rowry, & a well fayr wom*m*añ to wif; and' as meñ tellede oft, and' soth it is I-found', that som̃ of heme ben to vnstable of herth [2], wher-throgh many harmes ben o*þer*-whill, þat ne beñ nat now al to rekne. This Rouryes wif worthen to þe loue of *Mac*murgh mor þan hyr own̄ lord', and he hir also, & this was longe; bot to-giddre ne myghtyñ þei nat com̃ as the wold'; for hit betid' a tym̃ þat hir lord' went owt of his contrey in-to fer londes, for grete nedes þat he hade to doñ. his wif a-waitede full well, & aspied' þat hir lord' most longe be owt of lond', send' to *Mac*murgh, & bade hym̃, þat if he eu*er* wold' his will hawe of hir, that he shold' com̃ to hyr, for sho was redy to do all þat hym̃ likede. ¶ *Mac*morgh name power *with* hym̃, and' went thar this lady was; & as hit be-spok*e* was, he name hir, & broght hir out of myth into leynestr, and hell hir that to

[1 &, an, a]. [2 heart].

but the wife of King Rory of Meath loved him,

and sent for him when Rory was away.

He took her to Leinster, A. D. 1152,

OF THE CONQUESTE OF IRLAND BY ENGLYSH̃ MEN̄.

(*MS. Rawl.* B. 490, *Bodl. Libr.*)

[CHAPTER I.]

[Fol. 1 a.] IN the tyme that Kynge Henry, that was the kynges Fadyr Rychard̄ and the kynges Fadyr Ihoñ, regned̄ in England̄, was an hey man in Irland, whos name was callyd̄ Dermot Macmurgh̄, Prince of leynystre, that is y-tolde the fyfte Parte of Irlande. That Dermot, from the tyme that he was lorde of lond, *and* folk̄e sholde govern̄, he werret cruely amonge his hey men, *and* so harde hame lade, that thay castyn grete hate to hym, *and* muche they were ayennes hym in herte, theght they ne dvrste nat opynly shewe. Whan he hadd thus longe tyme lade hym amonge hys men, be-felle an aduenture that turned̄ hym ther-aftyr to mych̄ harme; For in myth was a kynge, whos name was Roury, *and* hadd̄ a wel fayre woman to wyffe; and as men tellyth ofte, and sith hit is y-found̄, that some of them ben vnstabill of hert, wherfore many harmys ben ofte-tymes, that ben nat now all to reherse //

Capitulum 1^m.

Leinster is a fifth part of Ireland.

Tiernan O'Rourke, king of Breifny.

This Rouries wyfe lowyd more Macmurgh than hyr owyn lorde; and he hyr also, and this was longe; but to-giddyr ne myght they not come as they wolde; for hit be-felle in a tyme, that hyr lord went out of his contrey into fere londys, for grete neddes that he hadde to done. His wyfe be-thoght hyr ful well, and, Supposynge that hyr lord moste longe be out of londe, Sche sente to Macmurgh̄, and sayde to hym, that yf he euer wolde his wille haue of hyr, that he sholde cvme to hyr, for she was redy to do al that hym lykyd̄ //

'Varium et mutabile semper femina' (Virg. Aen. iv. 569).

A. D. 1152.

Macmurgh̄ toke wyth hym many men, and went there this lady was. and as hit was be-for spoke be-twen̄ them both, he toke hyr wyth hym out of myth into leynestere, and helde hyr there to hys

O'Rourke's wife carried off.

A.D. 1152. and kept her there.

his will. Nat for-þan sho grad and cried, as thogh he nam hir agaynes hir will, as hit nas nat so. Than hir lord hit herde, he was ther-of tened swith stronge, and mych mor of the shamme

Rory and his ally, the King of Connaught,

þat to hym was don, þan of the harme; all that he mygth do, he didde, for to awreke hym; he sent after his own power, ande eke all þat he myght of other; and the kynge of Connagth, þat was that tym lorde of Irland, com to hym with his power:

march into Leinster.

he gadrede so moch folke(?) þat non end nas, and com into leynestr for to wreke hym of his shame. Tho Macmorgh this herd, he sent to his men þat þay sholde hym helppe ayeyn his fomen þat þus weren commyng toward hym. They bethoghten

Mac-murgh's men refuse to help him;

ham of the ten & the trayson þat they ham hade ydon per-to-fore | and forsoke, al out of dout, þat þay nogth woll hym helpe; and many of ham openly turned to his fomen ayeyns hym, ffor to wreke ham of the iniurie þat he ham had don. Macmorgh saw þat power hym failled, & euerich half he was amyde his fomen beset. he was man of hegh hert; and with þe litill power þat he had, he werrede as long as he myght; bot he ne myght nat all-way all-on ayeyns all the lande folke | he was so narowe bilad þat nedes he most tholl deth, other þe lond leue; he saw þat non oþer remedy was: he went to the see, and fond shippe redy, and wynde at will, & passede oure into england, with well few with hym; and on this maner he sawit his lif, & lefte lond & lede & all his other good. Hereby þat men may witte, þat be a man of neuer so mych power, bettre hym is þat hys men hym loue þane hate. ¶ Whane Macmorgh was thus icome in-to england, al hys thoght was how he myght hym best worck of the schame þat hyme was done, & of þat þat he was so vilich out of hys kynd lond I-dryue, he nyst of whom he myght bettre besech help þane of þe kynge. And þe kynge was þane fer in the realme of fraunce for grete nedes þat he hade to done. Macmorgh passed ouer to hym. þe kynge fayr hym vndrefynge, * & with mych mane shipe. and whan had he tolde hyme the enchesoun of hys comynge to hym, and whar-for he was out of hys londe ibanshed, þe kynge was swyth wo therfor, & good hert hadde hym to helpe, nar oþer grete nedes þat he hade to done. Whane he ne myght

so he sails to England, A.D. 1166,

[*Fol.1b.]

and then to France, to ask Henry II's aid.

wylle. And ther-fore she Cryed, and mad moche sorow and lemen- A.D. 1152.
tacion, as thogh he toke hyr ayeynnes hir wyll: As hit was not So /

Than hyr lorde hit herd, he was ther-of full stronge a-greued, and O'Rourke
mych more of the shame that to hym was don, than for the harme. is wroth at the shame
Al that he myght do, he dyd, forto be wroke on hym. he Sente done him,
aftyr his owyn men, and eke al that he myght of othyr; and the and
kynge of Connaght, that In that tyme was lorde of Irlande, come to
hym wyth his Power. And he gaderid so myche Pepyll, that they invades
were vnnvmerable, Comynge Into leynystre, forto be vengyd of his Leinster.
shame //

Tho Macmurgh her[de ther]of, he Sent to his men, that thay Mac-
sholde hym helpe ayeynes his foe-men, that thus weryn comynge murgh's
to-warde hym.

Thay bethoghten them of cruelte and the traysoun that to ham
he hadd done therto-fore, And forsoke al out of dowte that thay
wolde noght hym helpe. And many of them opynly turned to his
Ennemys ayeynes hym, ffor to wroke tham of the Iniury that he
to them hadd done //

Macmurgh sawe that his men failled hym; and on Euche halwe men fail
he was amyd his ennemys besegyd. He was a man of hey herte; him,
and wyth the fewe Pepill that he hadd, he werrid as longe as he
myght; but he ne * myght not alway dure ayennes the Londe folke. [*Fol. 1 b.]
He was so narow bylade, that nedys he mvste suffyr deth, or the
londe leue. he saw that non othyr remedy was. He went to the
see, and fovnde shippe redy, and wynde at wyll, *and* passyd owyr so he
into England, *with* wel fewe *with* hym; *and* on this maner he sauyd crosses to England,
his lyfe, *and* lefte lond and lede, and al othyr good // Here-by men A.D. 1166,
may witte that, be a man neuer of so mych Powere, bettyr hit is to
hym, that his men hym loue, than hate // Whan Macmurgh was
thus y-come Into England, al his thoght was, how he myght hym
best wreke of the shame that hym was y-don, and of that that he
was so shamfully out of his kynde londe I-dryue. He wyst not of
whom he myght bettyr beseke helpe *and* sokovre, than of the
kynge. And the kynge was then fer in the reame of Fraunce, for and then
gret nedys that he hadd to don. Macmurgh passyd ouer to hym, to France,
the kynge fayre hym vndyrfonge, *and with* mych vyrchipp. And where Hen. II
when he hadde tolde hym the cause of hys comynge to hym, *and* welcomes him.
the cause where-for he was out of his Land y-baneshyd, the kynge
was sory therfor, *and* good-will hym hadd to helpe, nere othyr grete
nedys that he hadde to don. Whan he ne myght nat ellis do, he

A. D. 1166-7.

nat elles do, he name of hym homage, & othes, & lete hyme mak hys lettres, that thus mych ben to vndrestond: 'Henry, throgh gode-is *grace* kynge of englond, duc of norm*andy* & of Acquitayne, & erl of angoy, to al hys liegemen, englyssh, normannes, Walshe, Scottes, and to al oþer that to hym ben subiect, sendeth gretynge. Whan þese lettres to yow ben i-com̃, witte ye þat we, dermot, prince of leynester, in our grace and in our goode will hawe receyuet; wharfore þat all þay that hym̃ as our lawfull man̄ helł[pe] willeth, into his lond hym̃ to restore, our grace and our goode leue haue þay þer-to.' Whan̄ Macmorgh hade the kynges lettres thus y-purchasede—þe kynge hym yaf also richely þat hym̃ nedet of his tresour—he nam̃ leue of the kynge, & wentt in-to englond & com̃ to Bristow, & soiourned thar a whill; & so mych the blethelier, for þer com̃ oft shippes theder out of Irland, & men̄, þat he myght hir tythynge of the lond & of his folkis, for his hert was mych there-to. The whill þat he ther was, well oft he let rede þe kynges wrytte to-for the peple; & largely he beheght londes and rentes, & Rich yiftes, if any wer that hym̃ helpe wold. Bot he ne fond noon̄ with-all, that such tynge wolde ne durst vndirtake, till þat the erle of Strugoill, Richard þe Erles son̄ Gilbert, com̃ to hym̃. Ther was þe parlement so longe y-dryue betwen̄ ham̃, & sekiritesse y-makyd, þat the Erle shold hym̃ helpe with all his power þe next somer þer-after, and he shold yeue þe Erle his doghtre, with all þe lond of leynestre. ¶ Whane this was on this maner ypu[rueied, for the grete] talent þat Macmorogh had to ben̄ neer his lond—as man̄ tynke [no place so[1]] mery lyghtly, as in his kynd stidde,—he went hym thennes in-to south walys, to seynt dauyes toun, vp-on̄ þe see; & mych hit gladet his hert, thogh he stronghly mourned, þat he myght in fayr weder haue somdell sight of his lond.

Henry appeals to his subjects to help Macmurgh,

who returns to Bristol,

and agrees to give his daughter and Leinster to Earl Strugoill, in return for aid.

Macmurgh goes to South Wales,

A.D. 1167,

¶ In that tym̃ was prince in wales, Rys, Gryffynes son̄, onþer[2] the kyng of england; & a swith good man̄ bisshoppe of seynt dauy, and was his nam̃, 'ahon dauy'; & both þe prince & eke þe

where Rys is prince.

[1] Dermitius, desiderio visendae patriae plurimum accensus, eaque dulcedine, qua natale solum cunctos ducere solet, amplius allectus.—Gir. Camb., *Expugnacio Hibernica*, cap. ii, *Op.* v. 228, Rolls Series.

[2] under.

toke of hym homage *and* othis, *and* lette hym make his letter*es*, A.D. 1166–7.
that thus myche bene to vndyrstond' // 'Henry, throw goddys
grace, kynge of England, Duke of Normandy and of acquytanye, The Kyngys
and Erle of angoy, to al his lege men, Englyssh, normannes, Walshe, letter*es*
Scotes, and to al othyr that to hym ben subiecte / Sendyth gretynge.
Whan this lett*r*es ben to yow y-come, witte ye that we, Dermot in favour of Murrough,
Prince of Leynystre, in our*e* grace *and* in our*e* goode-wyll, haue
receuet; wherfor that al thay that hym / as our*e* laufull man he[l]pe
will, Into his londe hym to restore, our*e* grace and our*e* good-wyll
haue they therto' // 'When Macmurgh hadd' the kynges Letter*es*
thus y-Purchasyd', (the kyng hym yafe also rychely, that hym nedyd'
of his tresour*e*,) He toke Leue at the kynge, *and* went into England', who comes back to England,
and come to Brystow, *and* soyorned' ther awhyle; *and* myche radyr,
for ther come oft shippis thedyr out of Irland', *and* men, that he
myght hyr thythynge of the Londe *and* of his Pepyll; for his hert
was mych therto // The whyle that he there was, well oft he made
to be redd' the kynges lett*r*es to-for the Pepyll; and largely he
promysyd' londys, and rentis, *and* othyr ryche yeftys, to them that
hym wolde he[l]pe. But he ne found' none, wyth al that, that Suche
thyng wolde ne druste vndyrtake, tyll that the Erle of Strugoill, and is promist help by Richard, Earl of Striguil.
Richarde, the Erlis Son*n*e Gylbert [1], come to hym. Ther was the
Parlement [2] so longe y-dryue be-twen ham, and sekyrnesse y-makyd',
that the Erle sholde hym helpe w*ith* al his Powere the nexte
somere ther-aftyr, And he sholde yeue the Erle his doghtyr, w*ith*
al the lond' of leynystre // Whan this was on this maner purueyed' [3],
For grete affeccion that Macmurgh had' to ben neere his londe, (as
man thynkyth no Place so Myrry lyghtly as in his Kynd' * Place,) [*Fol. 2 a.]
he went fro thens Into Suthe Walis, to Seynt Dauyes tou*n* vp-on
the see; *and* mych hit gladdyd' his herte, thegh he strongly mornyd',
that he myght in fayre weddyr haue somdel Syght of his lond /
In that tyme was prynce in walis, Rys, Gryfynes Son*n*e, vndyr the
kynge of England', And a wyrshipphul man, Bishope of Seynte
Dauy, *and* also his name was dauy [4]. And' both the Prince *and* also

[1] Camden adds 'dictus Strengbow, *fortis arcus*.'—D. [2] Colloquium.
[3] His itaque seriatim hoc ordine completis. [4] Davidque secundo Meneviae praesidente.

A.D. 1167. bisshop̄ well wyrshipfully vndrefynge Macmorgh, & mych reut had of his enemyte, & of his mych lostes, & of þe mych shamme þat hym̄ was i-doñe.

[CHAPTER II.]

Rys has in prison a Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, once Constable of South Wales.

In the tym̄e þat this was so, was in prisoñ with þe prince of wales, a knyght þat heght Robert Stefenes-soñ, þat som̄ tym̄ had y-be constable of all south walys, & many il turnes had idoñe vpon̄ þe princes men̄ whan̄ þay any thynge mysdeden̄; & þrogh traison̄ of his owñe men̄ he was I-take & delyuered to the prince; & þre yer̄ he was I-hold in prisonne ar Macmorgh theder cam̄. Oft þe prince hym̄ profred to delyuer hym̄ out of prisoñ, so þat he wold be his helppe to werry vp-oñ þe kynge; bot Robert was a trew man̄, & for no tynge wold do thynge wher-of he myght be þer-after I-wyted of wntrowth. Than̄—þrogh

[*Fol. 2a.] besechynge of *þe bisshope & of Moryce fitz-Geraud, þat weren̄ Robertes two brethere men̄ on his moþer half,—he was delyuered owt of prisoñ on this manere: þat he & Morice his brother shold, þe next somer, wend in-to Irland, with ar power̄ to helppe Macmorgh; & he shold hym yeue þe ton̄ of weysford, with þe twey next cantredes; & of this was good sekernes Imaked on ether̄ half.

He sets Robert free, on condition that he and his half-brother Maurice Fitz-gerald help Mac-murgh.

¶ Whan̄ this thyng[1] was all thus bespokene, Macmorgh ne myght no lengere suffre þat he ne most to his land wend, thegh he ne fond nat þe aduentures þat he soght, such as hyme lif wer̄, ne non other power̄ he ne broght with hym̄ than he out ladde. He had shippe redy, and good wynd, and passed ouer in-to Irland, & boldly aryued in lond þer he had many fomen̄ and fewe frendes. from̄ þe see he went to fernes; and well simply he lyued þer all þe wynttyr̄ with the Clergie of þe chirch, wiche well fayr̄ hym̄ vndrefynge, and by hare power̄ to hym̄ & to his, fonden̄ þat hame was nede.

[1 MS. kyng.]

Macmurgh sails to Ireland, and winters at Ferns.

[CHAPTER III.]

A.D. 1169.

Vnder that tyme, Robert Steunes-soñ hym̄ dyght to wend in-to Irland, as a man̄ þat on all maner wold hold lawfully his trowthe and his behest. he hade purueied hym̄ of xxx^ti knyghtes and lx skyers, & ccc of foot-men̄ with bowes and arowes; and knyghtes and þe skyers well I-horsed and well y-wepened, all of his own̄ kyne and of his owne nurtur̄. Thay

Fitz-stephen collects 30 knights, 60 squires, and 300 foot-men

the Byshope wel wyrchipphully vndyrfonge Macmurgh, and̄ myche Pite hadd̄ of his Enemyte and of his mych Lostys, And of the mych shame that hym was done. A.D. 1167.

[CHAPTER II.]

IN the tyme that this was so, was in Prisonne wyth the Prince of Walys, a knyght, whos Name was Robert Steues-Sonne, that sometyme hadd̄ y-be constabill of al Suthe Walis, and many yll tvrnys hadd y-doñe vp-on the Princes men, when thay eny thyng mysdedyn; and throgh traysoun of his owyn men, he was y-take and delyuerid̄ to the Prince. And thre yere he was holde in prison, are Macmurgh thedyr come. Oft the Prince hym̄ proferyd̄ to delyuer hym out of pryson, So that he wolde be his helpe to wer vp-on the kynge; but Robert was a trew man, *and* for nothyng wold̄ do thynge wher-of he myght be ther-aftyr reprovid̄ of vntrowth // Capitulum 2m. Ea tempestate Robertus filius Stephani, qui apud Aberteivi, Kereticae regionis caput, &c.

Than,—throgh be-sechynge of the Byshope *and* of Moryce fiz-Geraud̄, that weryn Robertys two bretheryn on his Modyr syde,—he was delyueryd̄ out of Pryson on this manere: That he and Morice his brodyr sholde, the nexte Somyr, wende Into Irland̄, *with* har Powere, to helpe Macmurgh; and he sholde hym yeue the toun of weysford̄, *with* the twey nexte cantredes: and of this was good̄ swrte y-fondyd̄ on euery syde. / Whan this was al thus Spokyn̄, Macmurgh myght not lengyr Suffyr that he ne mvste to his Lond̄ wende, thegh he ne found̄ nat the aduentures that he Soght, suche as hym lykyd̄, ne none othyr Powere he ne broght wyth hym, than he out-ladd̄. / he had̄ shipe redy, *and* good̄ wynd̄, and Passyd̄ ouer into Irland, and boldely arryued̄ in londe ther-as he hadd̄ many Enemys and few frendys. / From the see he went to Fernys; and wel sympylly he lyued̄ there al the wyntyr, *with* the Clergy of the chyrche, whych wel fayre hym vndyrfonge, and by har Power to hym and to his, foundyn that ham was nede. Intervenientibus igitur uterinis ejusdem fratribus, &c. A clero loci illius honorifice juxta modulum facultatis exhibitus, &c.

[CHAPTER III.] A.D. 1169.

VNder that tyme, Robert Steues-Sonne hym dyght to wende Into Irland, as a man that on al maner wolde holde lawfully his throuth, and his beheste. He had Purveyed̄ hym of xxxti knyghtes and lx Squyeris, and ccc of fote-men *with* bowes and arowes; And the knyghtis and the Squyris wel y-horsyd̄ and wel wepenyd̄, al of̄ his owyn kyn̄ *and* his owyn nurture. Thay dyddyn Capitulum 3m. Nec promissionis immemor, nec fidei contemptor, &c.

and lands at Banow, c. May 1, 1169.

didden hame to saill att send dauyes, and aryueden at Banow in Irlaund; well vnsikere on euery halfe. thay vncharged hare shippes, & made ham loges on lond. Thane was fulfilled a prophecie

A prophecy of Merlin was thus fulfild.

þat merlyn seid of this commynge: "A knyght with party armes shall formost breke þe clos of Irland." Such armes bare þat Robert. he send son to Dermod Macmorgh, and didde hym to witt of his commynge; and þe thedynge spronge fort son into all þe lond; what folke was to hym Icom. and of þo that to-for hym hade I-left, and litill told by hym, commyn son to hym, so þat he had I-gadered fywe hundred men. he wentt witt this folk to þe Englysse-men; and [when] þay com to-geddr, euery of ham was the gladder for other. Ther was the forward meued bethwen ham, and othes y-swor, and sekernesse I-made to conferme all þe forward, as hit there-by-for was purueied by-for the prince of wales.

Macmurgh and Fitz-stephen unite their forces,

[CHAPTER IV.]

and march to Wexford, about twelve miles from Banow.

Whan this sekernesse was thus y-maked, þese twey maner folkes, with oon will, and with oon hert, with Baners i-lacet, nam the wey toward weysford. The men of þe self ton weren ywar of har commyng, and tok ham to rede—for þe tother weren so few, & day so many—that þay wold figth with ham in þe pleyne felde. They cam owt of the ton arraied on har maner; bot whan þay sawe the Englismen, with hors I-helled with yren harnes, ham-self well I-wepned with haubergeons, and Bright helmes and sheldes, wich the sawe neuer þer-to-for, they toke a-nother rede, and turned ayeyn to ton; & all þat was with-owt þe walles, thay sett a-fyr and brent, & redied ham to hold ham with-yne the wallys with streynthe. Robert with his men went strongly for to assayll to ton, & sette the bowmen for to wer the fight of the kernels, and turned the wepned men to fill þe *diches. thay with-yn defendet ham stalwarthly with stonnes and stakes, wher-of they wer I-warned, and wer many I-hurt whit-yn and eke with-out, so that thay with-out mosten nedes leue of the assaut, & withdraw ham. Among ham was a yong knyght þat het Robert de Barry, þat drogh yong blodes hete, and for hys stalwardnes, reght nat of his lif: as he wold with þe formoste passe ouer the wall, he hent a dynt with a greth stone vpon þe

The townsmen at first resolve to meet them in the field, but, on seeing their array, retire within the city.

[*Fol. 2 b.]

The assault on Wexford is successfully resisted.

Robert de Barri has a

ham to sayle at Seynt Dauyes, and londyd at the Banow in Irland, wel vnsykyr on euery syde. thay vnchargid har shippis, *and* made ham logis on londe *. Than was fulfillid a prophesy that Merlyn seyde of this comynge: 'A knygh[t] *with* Party armys shall formyst breke the clos of Irland.' Such armys bare that Robert. He sent sone to Dermot Macmurgh, and didde hym to vndyrstand of his comynge; And thythyngis spronge forth sone Into al the londe, what Pepill was to hym cõme. And many of them that to-forn hym hadd forsake and lefte, *and* lytill seett by hym, comen sone to hym, So that he hadd gaderid v. C. men. / He went *with* this pepyll to the Englysh men; And when thay come to-geddre, eu*e*ry of them was the gladdyr for othyr / Ther were the for-sayde conontis rehersyd *and* mevid betwen tham, and othis sworn, *and* sekyrnesse made, to conferme all the forsayde, as hit was ther-to-fore Purveyed be-fore the Prince of Walys. A.D. 1169. [*Fol. 2 b.] Party per pale gules & ermyn a saltyer contre-chaunged. Miles bipartitus armis, Hiberniae claustra primus irrumpet.

[CHAPTER IV.]

WHan this sekyrnysse was thus madd, this two man*er* Pepyll, wyth on wyll, and *with* oon herte, *with* baners lacyd, toke ther wey towards weysford. The men of the toune weryn y-ware of thare comynge, *and* toke them to consayll,—for the othyr weryn so few, and thay so many,—that thay wolde figh[t] *with* ham in the Playn felde. Thay come out of the tou*n* arrayed on ther man*er*; but when they sawe the Englysh men, *with* hors y-hellyd *with* Iryn harneys, ham-Selfe wel wepenyd *with* hauber-geons, and bryght Salletis and sheldys, whych thay sawe neu*er* there-to-forn, thay toke anothyr consayll, *and* turned ayayn to tou*n*; and al that was *with*-out the wallis, thay sette afyre *and* brente; *and* arrayed tham to kepe ham *with*-In the wallis *with* Streynth. Robert, wyth his men, went Strongly to assaylle the tou*n*, *and* sette the bowmen forto were the fyght of the cornelis, *and* turned the wepenyd men to fill the dichis. thay wythin defendyd ham boldely *with* Stones and Stakys, wher-of they were y-warnyd, [.....] and mosten nedis lewe the assaute, and wythdrawe ham / Amonge ham was a yong knyght / whos name was Robert de barry, that, throgh yonge blodis hette, *and* for his boldnys, roght not to lesse the lyfe / As he wolde wyth the fryst Passe ou*er* the walle, he hadd a stroke *with* a grette stõne vp-on Capitulum 4^m^. equestrem turmam loricis et clipeis galeisque fulgenti-bus in-signem... propugna-cula vero sagittariis eminus observanti-bus... juvenili insultans calore...

A. D. 1169. narrow escape.

heuedˀ al *with* the helme, þat he fel dou*n* yn the groundˀ of þe dicħ; & vnnethes he was I-draw vp throgħ his felowes, þat mycħ put har lyf in aduentuˀ for to saw his lif. The cry was welł gret on eu*e*ry syde, for this knyght þat thus was I-hurt. Thay *with*-drow hamⁿ fro the wallys andˀ wenten hamⁿ to þe strondˀ; andˀ

The assailants of the town burn the ships they find on the strand.

alł þe shippes þat þay þ*er* fondˀ, thay settene a-fyr*e*. And . O . shippe þ*er* was, that was I-comⁿ owt of Brittayne aftyr cheffaˀ, andˀ was y-charget *with* whet & *with* wynes, andˀ lay I-ancred in the hauene: the best p*ar*te of the englismeⁿ wentenⁿ *with* bottes andˀ tok*e* his shippe. þe shippmenⁿ werne many, andˀ saw that þ*er* weren bot a few englys in the shipp*e*, & the wyndˀ was of þe londˀ; thay cutte the cabłe of the ankr*e*, andˀ þe wyndˀ bar*e* the shippe in towardˀ the see: her fellowes saw this, andˀ wentenⁿ aft*er* *with* bottys; andˀ vnnethe *with* rowyng, andˀ *with* gret p*er*il of all har lyues, þay come ayeyn to lond. Macmorgħ saw this, & werenⁿ sore amaied, for thay wendˀ neu*er* more þat on [of] ham sholdˀ haw comⁿ to londˀ a-lyue. The assaut was I-left all þat day. A-morowe, whan masse was I-herdˀ, al þe host þay wentene to the assaut wislyere andˀ warliere þan thay diddenⁿ the day befor, and strusten as welł to sleght as to streynth. The menⁿ of the tonⁿ sawⁿe ham commyng, and wer right soˀ aferdˀ that day shold nat withstond the assaute, and vndrestonden al-so that *with* wrong dayˀ holden ayayn her lordˀ; thayˀ tok ham to red, and besoghten pees; & drogħ be-sechyngę of twe bissoppes, that þat tym weren *with*-yn the tou*n*, and other possibłe men al-so *with* ham, thay yolden hamⁿ al to Macmor[gh]; and fouˀ hostaġes, the best þat he woldˀ chese, delyuered to hymⁿ for the pees, and trywly *with* hym for to holdˀ frome þat tym forward, as har kyndly lord. Macmorgh, as wise & waˀ, ffor-thy that he woldˀ that þe out-commyn men sholdˀ haw the bettre hert, and willł, hymⁿ for to serue, he bethoght þat, of the fyrst good aduentuˀ þat hym was befall, þay that best weren worthy sholdˀ hawe haˀ p*ar*te, and þe host. Al þe ton of weysford, *with* twey cantredes aller-next, he yaf to Robert, steuenes sone, and to Morice fitz-Geraudˀ, as forwardˀ was to-foˀ maked; othere thwey cantredes he yaf heruy of Mountmorthy,—neghest thay tweyn on the syd toward Waterford,—a knyght þat

Next day, the townsmen surrender.

Macmurgh gives grants of land to Maurice Fitzgerald and Hervey of Mountmaurice.

the hedde al *with* the Sallet, that he fell doun to the grovnde of the dyche; *and* vnnethis he was vp-rerid̃ throgh his fellovys, that myche Put har lyfe in aduenture forto sawe his lyfe. The cry was well grette on euery syde, for this knyght that thus was y-hurte. Thay wythdrow ham all from the wallis, *and* wenten to the stronde; *and* al the Chippis that they ther found̃, thay setten afyre. And oo shippe ther was, that was y-come out of Brytayn aftyr cheffare, *and* was y-chargid̃ *with* whete and *with* wynes, *and* lay y-ancred̃ in the Havyn. The beste Parte of the Englysh̃ men wenten wyth botis, and toke this shippe: the Chippmen weryn many, *and* saw that ther weryn but a fewe Englysh̃ men in the shippe, *and* the wynd was on the londe syde; thay cvtte the Cabilys of the ancre, *and* the wynd bare the Chippe to-ward the see. Her Fellouys sawe this, *and* wentyn[1] aftyr wyth botis; *and* vnnethe *with* rowyng, *and* wyth grette Perill of al there lyues, they come ayeyn to lond̃. Macmurgh̃ saw this, *and* was sore aferde, for they wende neuer * more that one of Ham sholde haue come to Londe a-Lyue. The assaute Was Lefte al that day. A-morrow, whan masse was herd̃, al the Oste the[n] wenten to the assaute wyslyer and waryr than thay diddyn the day to-fore, and trusten as well to sleght as to streynth. The men of the toun saw ham comynge, *and* were ryght sore aferde that thay ne sholde not wythstonde the assaut, *and* vndyrstodyñ also that *with* wronge thay heldyn ayeyñ her lorde. thay toke ham to consayll, and besoghten Pees; and, throgh besechynge of two Bisshopis that that tyme weryn wythin the toune, *and* othir Pesibbill men also *with* ham, thay yoldyn ham al to Macmurgh̃; and foure Hostagis, the beste that he wolde chese, delyuerid̃ to hym for the Pees, *and* trewely wyth hym forto holde from that tyme forward̃, for har trew Lorde/ Macmurgh, as wysse and ware, For cause that he wolde that the strangeres sholde haue the bettyr hert *and* will, hym forto serwe, he bethoght hym that, of the fryste good̃ aduenture that to hym was fall, thay that best weryn worthy, they sholde haue there Parte, and the hegheste. All the toun of weysford̃, *with* twey cantredes alther-nexte, he yafe to Robert Steuenes-sone *and* to Moryce fiz-Geraud̃, as the Promes to-for was made / othyr twey cantredes he yafe Heruey of Montmvrthy,—nexte to thay two on the

A.D. 1169.

A Breton ship with wheat and wine is taken by English sailors.

The French cut their cables and set sail; but the English are rescued.

[1 wentyntyn, MS.]

[*Fol. 3a.]

The allies march to assault Wexford again;

but it is yielded to them.

It is given to Fitz-Stephen and Fitz-Gerald.

A.D. 1169. coⁿ in that same * flote, hym þriddesum of knyghtes, and coⁿ
[*Fol. 3 a.] þrogh the Erle Rich*ard*, more for to spỳe the lond' than to fight.

[CHAPTER V.]

The united forces invade Ossory, to the prince of which country Macmurgh was a bitter enemy.

Vhan this was thus I-don al after har̃ will, they tok with hame the folk of weysford', and' wenten ham̃ toward' Ossery, with ferd' as myght as myght by tre thousant men̄; and was than prince of Ossory, Macdonenild', a mañ þat was Macmorogh swith loth and all his men̄, for mỳch shame that thay had hym i-do. At þe begỳnynge, as thay coⁿ in-to the contrey, in narrow weys drogh woddes and' mores, thay fonden the men̄ of the contrey stalwarth for to defend' har̃ lond'; & mych tene ham̃ didde, ar that day myght [take] the pleyne; and' eke into the pleyn thay folwed' ham̃ full freslỳ. the horsman̄ saw this, and' turned manly vp-on ham, & anoon slowen right many of ham̃, & discomfited' ham̃ euerychone.

They defeat him,

And' thay þat þe horsmen̄ kest to ground' with speres and' with swerdes, þe yrisshe fotemen̄ smotene of the heddes. Whan þe slaght was all I-do, and' har enỳmỳes all ouer-comen, thay broghten well ccc heudes[2], and kesten at Macmorgh feet. he be-held' ham̃, & tried euerỳ of ham̃ bỳ ham̃-self, for to know hame, & hild' vp his handes and' tanked' god almyghtỳ ful Inwardly.

and Macmurgh triumphs in a brutal way.

Oon hede ther was, a-monge þe other', of a man that he ouer-dede and' mych hated; he name hit be the heer' and' by the eers, and' with girslich bit, as no man̄ ne oweth to done; with his teeth he karue of his nose and' both lippes. There-after þeỳ wenten̄ forther' into the contrey, slowen, robeden, and branden full manly al þat hame withstonden, in-to the tỳm the prince of Ossory, by consaill of his men̄, send' to ham̃, & be-soght pees: the pees was graunted' whan he hit bỳsoght, vp-on good ostages, and' othes I-swer', þat he, to his lord' Macmorgh, sholď be trew, and' trowth hold', trỳwly serue fro that tỳme forward'. in these fightes as in manỳ othere, thogh that in the englishe host noon wer' bot good and stalward', Robert þe Barr' and Meiler fiz-henrỳ weren thaỳ that best deden. Thaỳ weren both ỳong knyghtes, and Robert Steuenes-sonnes neues; the oon his brother' sone, the other' his susteres sone; of diuerse maners, both[3] of hardnes & of stalworthnes

Peace is made with the prince of Ossory.

Robert de Barri and Meiler Fitzhenry fight best.

[1] a small w is inside the V. [2] heuedes, heads. [3] but.

syde toward' watyrford'[1],—a knyght that come in that same flitte, hym thyrdesum of knyghtes, and' come throgh the Erle Rychard, more forto spy the londe than to fyght. A.D. 1169. [1] *mari conterminos.*

[CHAPTER V.]

Whan this was thus don al aftyr har will, thay toke with tham the Pepill of weysford', *and* wenten ham to-ward' Ossory, with oste as myght be by thre Mt. men[2]. And was than Prince of Ossory, Macdonenylde, a man that was myche be-hatyd' of Macmurgh, for myche shame that thay hadd hym donne. At the begynnynge, as thay come into the contrey, in narrow weyes throgh woddis and mores, thay foundyn the men of the contrey bolde forto defende har londe; *and* mych sorrow ham didd', ar thay mygh[t] take the Playne: *and* when thay come to the Playne, thay folwid' ham ful fresly. the hors-men saw this, *and* turned' boldely vp-on ham, and anoone slowyn rygh[t] many of ham, *and* dys-comfited' ham euerychon̄. And thay that the hors-men keste to ground' wyth Sperys *and* wyth Swerdis, the Iryssh̄ foote-men Smoten of the hedis. Whan the slaght was al y-do, *and* har ennemys al ouer-come, thay broghten wel CCC. hedis, and kesten at Macmurgh is fete. he behyld' ham, and' tvrned' euery of tham[3] by hym-Selfe forto know tham, and hilde vp his handis, *and* thankyd almyghty god' ful Inwardly. Oone hede ther was, amonge the othyr, of a man that he gretly dreddid' *and* myche hatid'; he toke hit by the heeres *and* by the Ers, *and* grymly hit bitte, as no man sholde haue doun; wyth his tethe he kutte of his nose *and* bothe lippis. Ther-aftyr they wenten fourdyr Into the contrey, kildyn, robedyn *and* brandyn ful boldely al that ham wythstodyn, into the tyme the Prynce of ossory, by consaylle of his men, sent to ham, *and* besoght Pees. the Pees was graunted' whan he hit be-soght, vp-on good' Ostagis, *and* othis y-Sworn̄e, * that he, to His Lord Macmurgh, shold be trewe, and trowth̄ Hold, and trewely Serwe fro that tyme forth. In this fyghtes as in many othyr, thoght that in the Englysh̄ hoste noone were but good' *and* bolde, Robert de barry *and* Meyler fiz-henry weryn thay that best diddyn: they wer both yong knyghtes, *and* Robert Steuenes-sones emys[4] both, the one his brodyr sonne, the othyr his Systyr Sonne; Of dyuers maners, but of hardynes *and*

Capitulum v^m^.

[2] cum exercitu virorum quasi trium milium.]

300 heads of foes are brought to Macmurgh.

[3] than, MS.]

He bites off the nose and lips of one.

His men kill, rob, and slay, till Macdonough sues for peace.

[*Fol. 3 b.]

[4] neveus, nepotes.

A. D. 1169. mostdele al I-lyċh; ffor Meyler was a maⁿ that ou*er* myċh desyredᶜ to be I-preisede, and þ*at* meⁿ sholden mẏċh speke of his stalwardnes, and preisen hym. Rob*ert* was kẏndlẏe, hardy,
[*Fol. 3 b.] & stalwarde, *and eu*er* *with* the forthmost in eu*ery* fight and in eu*ery* p*er*il, bot he hatede notynge so myċh as that me sholdᶜ spek of his stalwardnes, ne hyme p*rei*ese. The whill the host was thus in Ossory, befel þ*at* þaẏ wereⁿ a nẏght I-loget in an oldᶜ casteⁱl, & aboute; andᶜ these tweẏn, as haᶜ wone was, weren both I-hosted to-gedderes: ffeᶜ *with*-yn nyght come an host vp-on ham, of so myċh folk as thegh hit were fele thousandᶜ, on eu*er*ẏ side smẏtynge vp the host as they wolden in wode raas ferly ou*er*saiⁱl hame, al, *with* wepne rẏngẏnge, speres andᶜ sparthes ruthlynge to-geddre, *with* cryynge so gryslẏ that noon ende was of helf faᶜ, as [1]hoft-sithes was wonet to be-faⁱl in ostynges in Irlandᶜ; of whiche frightnes the most p*ar*te of the oste was so aferdᶜ, that þay flowe[2] and hidden haⁿⁿ, some in wodnes, som in mores. These twey stalwardᶜ mēn henten haᶜ wepene, & lep to hors, and wenten a-noon to Rob*er*tes tentes, (Steuenes sone,) andᶜ cryed vp-on haᶜ felowes þ*at* day sholden withstondᶜ; andᶜ tak hert to hame, andᶜ defendᶜ ham-self; bot few theᶜ weᶜ that so diden, til they saw that this crie andᶜ þe noise was all I-left, & nas bot fantasy. Whan the host hem gaddred ayaẏn to-geddre, thaẏ weᶜ fuⁱl soᶜ ashamet that thay so arglẏ put ham to f[l]ight, andᶜ myċh speche was amonge ham, andᶜ manẏ, hadden gret enuẏ, andᶜ mẏch wonder toght of Rob*ert* de baᶜ, that whan the host was in so gret frightnes, he was that maⁿ þ*at* stydfastlẏ most hẏm held, andᶜ most hẏm entised for to withstondᶜ andᶜ fight; andᶜ amonge aⁱl the goode thewes that in hym weren, þis inamliche is i-toldᶜ of hẏm, that for no violence ne ferlẏ aduentuᶜ þ*at* hym mẏght betid, he was neu*er* whan-hopefully argh, ne aferdᶜ, ne amayedᶜ of hert, ne shamefully ne didde hym to flight, bot eu*er* moᶜ he was I-licᶜ redy to weppen andᶜ to defendᶜ hym-self, andᶜ to helpen all oþ*er*; he the formost knẏght that in this conqueste of Irlandᶜ first receẏuedᶜ dẏnt andᶜ hurtẏng in battaill. A wondeᶜ was of that fantasye: A-morowe whaⁿ hit was daẏ, I the place, ther this folk I-seẏe smẏten vp-on hame, the wedes andᶜ the grase

A phantom army at night creates terror among the English;

[1 MS. host.]

[2 MS. slowe.]

but Meiler and de Barri manfully withstand the panic.

Character of Robert de Barri.

boldnys mostdele al y-lyke. For Meyler was a mañ that gretly desyryd' to be Praysid', and that men shold myche Speke of his boldnys, and Preysyn hym. / Robert was kyndly, hardy and bold', *and* eu*er* with the fryst in euery fyght / and in eu*ery* Perill; but he hatyd' nothynge so myche as that a man sholde speke of his boldnys, ne hym Preyse. / The whyll the hoste was thus in Ossory, befell that thay weryn a-nyght y-logid' in an olde castell, *and* aboute. And thus two, as they wer wonyd', weryn in one Plase to-gedderis. Fer with-in nyght, come an hoste vp-on ham of so mych Pepill, as they were many thowsandis, on eu*ery* syde Smytynge vp the hoste, as they woldyn, in wode raas, fersly ou*er*sayle hame al, wyth wepyñ ryngynge, Speris *and* sparris rutlynge to-giddyr, wyth cryynge so grymly, that none ende was Of elf fare, as ofte-tymes was wonet to befall in hostyngis in Irland'[1]. Of whych ferde, the moste Parte of the Oste was so a-dred', that they flow and hiddyn ham; somme in woddis, some in mores / This two bolde men token har wepyn, *and* lepe to hors, *and* wentyn anone to Robert Steuenes-sonne, and cried on har fellowis that 'they sholdyn wytstond', *and* take herte to hame, and defende ham-Selfe;' but fewe were that so diddyñ, tyll they saw that this cry *and* this noyse was al cessid', *and* nas but a fantasy. whan the host them gaderid' ayeyn to-giddyr, they wer ful sore asshamyd' that thay so fently Put ham to flyght; *and* mych Speche was amonge hame; *and* many haddyn gret enuy, *and* mych wondyr thoght of Robert de Barry, that Whan the host was in so gret ferde, he was that man that moste stidfastly hym helde, *and* moste them styrrid' to wythstond' and' fyght. / And amonge al the good' dedis that in hym weryn, this Pryncipaly is of hym tolde, that for no vyolence ne ferly aduenture that to hym chanssyd', he was neu*er* in wanhope sette, ne agaste, ne aferd', ne abassid' of herte, ne shamefully did hym to flyght; but eu*er*-more he was lyke redy to wepyn, and' to defend' hym-Selfe, And to helpyn al othyr. he was the formyst knyght that, in this conqueste of Irland', fryst receyued' stroke *and* hurte in bataill // A wondyr was of that fantasy a-morrow, whan hit was day: In the Playn ther this Pepill y-seye

A.D. 1169.

nec laudis exactor, nec auræ popularis aucupator.

A phantom host [*tanquam in impetu furoris sui cuncta devorantium*] frightens the English-men, who run and hide;

but are much ashamed when they find it was all fancy.

in hac Hiberniæ expugnatione.

[1] Cujusmodi phantasma in Hibernia circa expeditiones frequens esse solebat. —*Op.* v. 235.

A.D. 1169. that stoden al euen vp-right, thay lay all I-drow a-doune and I-cast to grond'. [*This grass, &c. only in Harl. MS.* 177. *Op.* v. 236.]

[CHAPTER VI.]

[*Fol. 4a.] As this was on this man*er* I-don, the tythynges sprongen in-to al Irland' hwow Macmorgh conquered his lond' * vpon his men, and' that no man myght hym withstond' for out-comen men that he lade *with* hym. Roryk O'Concowr' of Connaght, that was that tym kynge of al Irland', vndrestod hym, and' toght in his hert the gret *per*il that myght be-fall hym and' al the lond' folk, drogh the owt-comen folk þat was thus in-to the land' I-com; he sent his messagers to al the gret men of the lond', and' in a lityll whill gaddred ham to-geddre to a *par*lement, and' tok ham to rede that eu*er*y on his half shold' gaddre al the power' þat they myght, for to wer' vpon Macmorgh. And as hit was *pur*ueied, so hit was don; Thay assemblet so many hostes and' so mych folk on eu*er*y half, that noon end' was, and' comen to Okenselý for to weren vpon Macmorgh. Whan this hostes weren thus assemblet, the most p*ar*te of Macmorghis men, ayeyne har' trowth and' ayeyn har' othes, some pr*i*uely whithdrow hem that day, nold nat to hym com, some al openly leften hym, and wenten to his fomen ayeyn hym; so that, in his most nede, trew frendes ne fonde he non, sawe Rob*er*t, steuenes son, and his. *With* the litill folk that thay hadden, thay wenten in-to a place nat fer' from*e* ffernes, a pleyn place bisette about *with* montaignes and woddes, watres and mores, on eu*er*y side il to com [to]. the entrees that ther weren, by Rob*er*t-is deuice thay setten men for to stopen, in some place *with* trees I-cast don, and' in other places depe diches I-cast. thegh the place wer' stronge of kynde, thay maden hit mych stronge[r] *with* engyn, so that hit was I-now seker' recet to ham, and' [to] her' enemyes ful strong to com to, and *with* litill folk*e* hit myght be I-kept; & derne weies thay hadden *pur*ueied' to ham-self, owt to goo, ayeyn In to com, whan ham liked. Whan*e* the kynge of Connaght, *with* so many hostes, was to ham I-com, he send to Rob*er*t by Messangers, and' *pr*esent hym *with* rych yiftes, and' many mo he hym be-het, and' fast hym be-soght that, owt of þe Contr*a*y, wych*e* no Right

Roderic O'Conor tries to raise the whole country against Macmurgh and the English.

Many of Macmurgh's followers desert him, but Fitzstephen and his men stand by him.

They occupy a strong position not far from Ferns.

smytyn vp-on ham, the wedis and the grasse that stodyn al euyn vp-ryght, thay lay al y-throw dovñe *and* cast to ground. A D. 1169.

[CHAPTER VI.]

As this was thus donñe, the thythyngis Spronge Into al Irland, how Macmurgh conquerid his londe vpon his men, *and* that no man myght hym wythstond, for strange men that he ladd wyth *Hym. Roryke Oconghoure, of Connaght, that was that tyme Kynge of al Irland, vndyrstode hym, and thoght in his herte the grete Perel that myght be-fall hym *and* al the londe-Pepill, throgh the strangeres that was thus in-to the lande coñe. He sende his messangeris to al the Lordis of the Londe, *and* in a lytyll whylle gaddred ham to-gedre to a parlement, *and* toke ham to consayll, that euery on his Syde sholde gaddyr al the Pepill that thay myght, forto werre vpon Macmurgh. And as hit was Purueyed, so hit was doun. Thay assemblid so many Hostis, *and* so mych Pepill on euery syde, that were vnnowmmerabill, and comyn[1] to Okenseley forto werre vp-on Macmurgh / Whan this hostis weryn thus assemblet, the moste parte of Macmurgh-ismen, ayeyn hare trowthe and here othis, Some priuely with-drow ham, that they nolde not to hym come. Some al opynly lefften hym, *and* wenten to his ennemys ayeyñ hym ; so that, in his moste nede, trewe frendis ne fownde he noñe, Sawe Robert Steuenes-Sone *and* his. wyth the Lytill Pepill that they haddyn, thay wentyn into a place not fare frome Fernys, a pleyne place be-sette aboute with monttanys and woddis, watris and moris[2], on euery Syde il to come to. The entrees that ther weryn, by Robert-is deuyce thay setten meñ forto stopyn ; in some Place with trees y-caste douñe, and in othir Placis depe dichis y-caste. thegh the Place were stronge of kynd, thay maddyñ hit mych strongir with Engyn, So that hit was sure recette to tham, and to ther ennemys stronge to come to, and with lytill pepill hit myght be kepte. And Erthe-weyes thay haddyn madd to tham-Selfe, out to goo, and ayeyñ In to come, when them Plesyd. Whan the kynge of connaght, with so many hostis, was to tham come, he sende to Robert by Messangers, *and* presentid hym with rych yeftys, *and* mych more hym Promysyd, and gretly hym besoght that, out of the contrey, whych no ryght

Capitulum vj^m^. [*Fol. 4a.]

tam sibi quam patriae toti.

[1 comym, MS.]

in necessitatis articulo

[2 *paludibus.*

naturalem difficultatem industria plurimum et arte munivit.

A.D. 1169. he ne hadde to, ne no chalange ne myght setten vp-on, he and his, with pees and lou[e] shold departe. Mich they spek of this, and litell thay sped. Ther-afty*r*, the messagers turned to Macmorgh, and be-soghten hym on the kynges half, OConghour, that he forth, *with* ham, shold turne vp-on the owt-comen folk, ham to slee and vndo. And if he so wold, thay wold delyuer hym al leynestr, and stidfast pees and frend-*shippe mak hym haue of the kynge and of all other. Many reisons thay shewed, both for the land & for the land folk; bot notynge thay ne spedde, ne noon answar ne hadden, that ham liket. Oconghour saw and herd of his Messagers that he myght nat in such maner spede, and that he most with streynth do, that he myght nat with fair speche: he tok his wepne grymly, and stod vp a-monge his folk, and thus sayd to ham; "Mighty men, and stalward in fight for to defende your lond and your franchise! vndrestondeth, ayeyn whice folk, and for what encheson, ye shold this battaill tak an hond: al oure enemy, that afor thus was owt of lond I-dryw for his wykkednesse, In commune confusion of vs all, al be-tak *with* owt-comen & wepned folk, is ayayn commen for enuy and harme of vs, & hath I-broght vnked folk vp-on vs, that the harme wich he had no power to don vs hym-self, throgh helpe of ham & mayntenaunce, the better myght brynge to end; and hath dight hem to sheden his attyr so wide, that he rechet nat of his own deth, bot that al mowen hawe our bale throghe hym, and for noon shold be I-spared, and he ne spared hym-self. Ther-for we willen *with*stond the begynynge, and þe yuel whil hit is comyn, ar hit be Iroted; ffor harme wexet euer *with* longe abiddynge. Our lond & our fredom defended we manly; so that the slaght of þese fewe be ferdnesse to many; & be ensample of these, al other out-lond men to be adrede, such folies to begyn, and the mynd of vs, *with*-out end to rest[1]."

Roderic urges Fitzstephen to retire from the country,

[*Fol. 4b.]

and, failing in this, tries in vain to induce Macmurgh to turn against the English.

O'Conor addresses his followers,

and denounces the poisonous Macmurgh.

Patriam itaque tuentes, et libertatem

[[1] MS. best.]

[CHAPTER VII.]

Macmurgh harangues the men of Leinster.

Macmorgh, on his halue, be-held his men, and saw ham sor amayed: *with* wordes that he myght, he conforted ham on this maner: "Men of leynester, which, sothfast trowth & stidfaste kynd in al aduentures, vs hath felawes I-maked,

he hadd therto, ne no calange ne myght setten vpon, he *and* his, wyth Pees and loue, sholde deperte. Mych[1] they spoke of this, and lytyll thay Spede / There-aftyr, the messangers turned to Macmurgh, and be-soghten hym on the kyngis be-halfe, Oconnoghoure, that he forth, wyth tham, sholde turne vpon the strangeres, hame to kyll and vndo. And yf he so wolde, thay wolde delyuyr hym all leynystere, *and* stydfaste Pees *and* frendshippe make hym haue of the kynge and of al othyr. Many reysonys thay shewid, both for the londe and for the lond-pepill; but nothynge thay ne spede, ne noone answere hadde, that ham Plesyd. Oconnoghoure saw and herde of his messyngers, that he myght nat in suche maner spede, and that he moste with streynth do that, that he myght not with fayre speche. He toke his wepyn grymly, and stode vp amonge his pepill, and thus sayde to tham:—"Myghty men, and bolde in fyght forto defende youre londe and youre fredome! Vndyrstondyth, ayeyn whych *Pepill, and for whate cause, ye sholde this Bataill take on Honde. Al oure ennemy, that afor this was out of londe ydrywe for his wickidnes, In comynne confusion of vs all, all be-take wyth strangeres and wepened Pepyll, is ayeyn comyn, for Enuy and harme of vs, and hath broght strange Pepill vp-on vs, that the harme whych he hadde no Powere to don vs hym-selfe, throgh helpe of them and mayntenavnce, the bettyr myght brynge to ende; and hath dyght hym to shedyn his wenym so wyde, that he takyth no fors to dye, but that we al mow haue oure [e]will throgh hym, and for none sholde be Sparid, and he ne Sparyth hym-Selfe. There-for we will wy[th]stonde the begynnynge, and the Perel whyle hit is comyn, are hit be rotyd. For harme wexeth euer wyth longe abydynge. Oure londe and oure fredome, defende we manly; So that the slaght of this fewe be ferde to many; and by Ensampill of thes, al othyr strangers sholde be aferde, suche folies to begynne, And the mynde of vs, wyth-oute ende to abyde."

[1 Myth, MS.]

ut in exteras nationes delendas simul cum ipsis arma converteret.

patriae

[*Fol. 4 b.]

tutores, et libertatis.

quod, cunctis communi labe infectis, ut nemini parcatur, nec ipse sibi pepercit.

exterae nationes ab ausu tam nefario imperpetuum abstruantur.

A.D. 1169.

[CHAPTER VII.]

MAcmurgh / on his syde, be-held his men, *and* Sawe hame sore a-bassyd. with wordis that he myght, he confortid ham on this manere: "Men of leynyster, wych, trusty trouth and stydfaste kynde in al aduentures, vs hath fellowis y-made, wyth-

Capitulum vij^m.

comites indivisos

A. D. 1169. without any partyng, a-reꝛ we ouꝛ hertes, styfly vs-self to defend. The maistre of wreth and of Coueytise, that with streynth wold vs brynge vnderfoot, and ows ayeyn dryue out of lond, otheꝛ, that wors is, in the same londꝛ, vs tynken vndo: that god shildꝛ loo, heꝛ is I-coꝛ vpon ouꝛ hedꝛ, of his myċh gaderynge of folke prowt & hauteyn. be ye well vndrestond, þat nat trogh gret tale of men ne trogh greth streynth, both drogh *right and trowth that maꝛ hath with hym, battailles doth ouercoꝛ. We haue for vs, ayeyꝛ haꝛ pryd, mekenes; ayayns har vnryght, right andꝛ trouth; ayeyn haꝛ boldenesse and ouer-truste, mekenesse and maner. Thay fighten for coueytise, for to get good; andꝛ we, for to flee harme. with al this we bene in strong place andꝛ wel I-warnedꝛ. The moꝛ that heꝛ commeth, the more encombrement we shall do hame, by lityll folk ham to ouercoꝛ, so that we be of on hert, and stifly withstondꝛ.'

Let us defend ourselves!

[*Fol.5a.]

Right, not numbers, win battles.

Be of one heart, and fight!

[CHAPTER VIII.]

Whan Macmorghe hadꝛ his tale I-endeth in his speche, Robert Steuenes-soꝛ, spake to his felaws andꝛ to his meigne on this wise: "ffightyng fors, & yongelynges I-corne, that so many perilles hawe to-geddre I-soffredꝛ, andꝛ euer in al aduentures, andꝛ of heigh hert ibe! If we inly vndrestonde wiche meꝛ we ben, with what lodes-maꝛ, andꝛ for what thynge we this perille vndre-tok with stalwardnesse, as ouꝛ [wone]ys, we shullen ouercome; & the grace that ye I-haue i-hadde ar this of godꝛ, ne shal vs nat forlete. Of the folke of Troy we ben kyndlyċh y-come, oꝛ þat oon half, fro þe first begynnyge; of ffraunce, we haue kynde on otheꝛ half. Throgh kyndꝛ of Troy, we owe to be hardy; throgh kynd of ffraunce, we ben vsed in wepene; & so as we bene of double mane kyndly, of good herth & well y-wepnedꝛ, & well y-lernet yn wepne, ne dout no man, þat such vnwepnedꝛ rascayll any poweꝛ haw ows to wythstondꝛ: oꝛ that otheꝛ halue, we come nat yn-to thys land as hyryngꝛ men, ne for no couetyse of goldꝛ, ne of syluyꝛ, ne galyotȝ ne robbers; bott for to helpe thys heyth man that ys so noble & so fre, &, þrogh hys owne men, lodderly was of londꝛ y-dryue. we hawe reuth of hys haroꝛ; & helpeth vp þat adoun was ẏ-broȝthe; to hys kyndꝛ sted, bryngeth hym þat vnkyndly was

Fitz-stephen makes a speech to the English-men.

From Troy we get bold-ness; from France, skill in fight.

We come not for hire, or as pirates, but to help a noble man unjustly treated.

out eny p*ar*tynge, arrere we vp oure hert*es*, boldely vs to defende. The maystyr of wreth *and* of couetyse, that wyth streynth wolde vs brynge vndyrfote, and vs ayeyn dryue out of londe, Othir, that wors is, in the same londe Purposyth vs to vndo / that god forbedde / be-holde, here is come vp-on oure hedd, of his mych gadrynge of pepill Proute and hauteyn. be ye wel vndyrstond, that not wyth many men, ne wyth grete Streynth, bot by ryght *and* trouth that man hath wyth hym, batalis doth ou*er*come. We haue for vs, ayeyñ har pryde, mekenys; ayeynes har*e* vnryght, ryght *and* trouth; ayeyñ har boldnys *and* ou*er*-truste, mekenesse *and* man*er*. thay fyghtyn for couetyse, forto gete good; And we, to shonne myschefe. wyth all this, we byth in stronge Place, and well warnyd. The mor*e* that her*e* comyth, the mor*e* encombrement we shal do ham, by lytill folke ham to ou*er*come, So that we be of oñe herte, *and* styfly wystonde."

A.D. 1169.
[1] *the* óration [in a later hand]. *quod absit*

modus et modestia.

tam arte quam natura munitissimum.

[CHAPTER VIII.]

WHen Macmu*rgh* hadd his tale y-endyd in his speche, Roberte Steuenes-Soñe spake to his fellowys, *and* to them in this man*er* Sayde: "Fyghten feris, *and* yonglynges y-know, that so many Perelis haue to-geddyr Sofferid; and eu*er* in al aduentures, and of hey hert ben! If we Inwardly wndyrstonde what men we ben; wyth what lodes-man, *and* for what thynge, we this Perel vndirtoke; *with* boldnys, as we were wonyd, we shall ou*er*come; and the grace that we haue hadd ar this of god, ne shall vs not forsake. // Of* the folke of Troy we Ben Kynly come, on that one syde, fro the fryste begyn[i]nge; of Fraunce, we haue kynde on the othyr halfe. Throgh the kynde of troy, we sholde be bolde; throgh kynde of Fraunce, we ben wsyd in wepyñ; and so as we ben of doubil man*er* kyndly, of good herte *and* wel wepenyd, and wel lernyd in wepyñ,—ne dout no man, that Suche vnwepenyd rascaill any Powere haue to vs to wyth-stonde. One that ou*er* syde, we come not into this londe as wagid men, ne for no couetyse of golde, ne of Syluyr, ne of galiotz, ne robbers; but forto helpe this goode man that is so nobill and so fre, and, wyth his owyn men, wickydly was out of his londe drywe. We haue Pite of his harme; and helpyth vp that adoun was caste / to his kynde state,

Capitulum viij^m.

Bellorum socii, adolescentes electi.

[*Fol. 5 a.]

populum inermem.

Non ergo piratae, non praedones huc advenimus.

A.D. 1169. He has given us land.

ther-of I-bansheth. And he, as largh man & good prynce, hat vs yeuen wyde londes & ryche townes, & owr lond folke wyll setten & planten stydfastly yn þys lond, nowe & euer[1]. Therfor, men, full [of] streynth & stalwarthnes, such thyng y-magyneth to-day hartly to do, that owr kynred ne go nat out of kynd, & yn thys, lyuynge oþer dey, we manly wyn the pryce, that euer more torne to whyrshyppe vs & al our that aftyr ws shullen come."

[1 MS. ouer.]

We'll win the battle and glory.

[CHAPTER IX.]

Wythe these wordes, & other suche, these heghe men comforted har folk, for day schulden hawe the bettyr wyll well for to fyght. And whan day were on euery half redy for to smyth to-geddre, OConogwyr, be-thogghthyng that the aduentur of battaylle ben ofte doutouse & myche vncerteyne, And as the whysman seythe 'all tynge me shall assay, rather than fyzth,' & all-so he & hys doutenden well scre to assemble *with* folke I-wepned, On al maner that he myzght, * He was abowte thame sholde make peas. thane, throgh besechyng of goode nfene that went betwene, & throgh *grace* of the holy goste, was the peas y-made, on *þis* maner; that thay shulde leve leynester to Maccmorghowe, & he sholde hitt holde of Oconoghour, & hym knowlech, & suget be to hym as to a kynge & prynce of Irland. And þat thys shold be stydfastly I-hold, Macmorgh bytok hym hys sone to astage, by so, þat yf he good pees hold, & trewly hym helde, Oconghur shold hym yeue hys doghter to wyff. Whan thys was comynly I-shewed & I-knowe, & othes I-shwerne on euery half, all thys trewly to hold, Another thyng was bespoke bytwen ham, bott þat preuely, that Macmorgh ne shold nomore brynge vnked mon yn-to the lond, & thay that he hade y-broght, as rathe as he had leynestre yn good pees, he shold anoon send ayenne home, & delyueryd þe lond of ham.

O'Conor, doubtful of the issue, makes terms with Mac-murgh,

[*Fol.5 b.]

who, it is agreed, shall hold from Roderic, and give him his son as a hostage.

[CHAPTER X.]

Aftyr that þe pees was thys Imaket, þe host departed, euery on hys half. Sone þer-after come Moryce, Geraudes son, Robertes brother, of whom we spoken ar thys, wyth .x. knyghtes & .xxx. Squyres & ij houndred footmen, & ar[y]ued at weysford;

Maurice Fitzgerald now arrives, with a following, at Wexford.

bryngyth hym that vnkyndely was therof ȳ-banshet. And he, as large man and good Prince, hath vs yevyñ wyde landis and ryche townes; *and* oure londe-pepill will setten and Planteñ stydfastly in this londe, nowe and euer. Therfor, men full of streynth and of boldnes, Suche thynge ymagyneth to-day hertely to do, that oure kynred ne go not oute of kynde; and in this, lywe or dye, we manly wynn the Pryce, that euer-more shall tour[n]e to oure wyrchippe, and to al oure that aftyr vs schalle come." A.D. 1169. *gentem hic nostram in insula plantare. seu vincendo seu moriendo perpetuam nobis gloriam strenuitate comparemus.*

[CHAPTER IX.]

Wyth this wordis, and othyr Suche, thes good men confortyd hare Pepill, for thay sholdyn haue the bettyr wyll, well forto fyght. And when thay were on euery halfe redy forto smyte to-geddre, Oconghoure bethoght hym that the aduenture of bataill ben ofte doutfull *and* mych vncertayn. An[d], as the Wysman Seyth, "Althynge we oghte to assay, radyr than fyght" / And also he and his douteden well sore to fyght wyth Pepill wepenyd. On al maner that he myght, he was besy to haue Pees. Then, by the besechynge of good men that wente betwene, and throgh grace of the holy goste, was the Pees mad on this maner; that thay sholde leue leynystere to Macmurgh, and he sholde hite holde of Oconghoure, and hym knowlech, and Subiecte be to hym as to a kynge and Prynce of Irland. And that this sholde be stydfastly holde, Macmurgh toke hym his sone to hostage, by So, yf he good Pees helde, and trewely hym helde, Oconghoure sholde hym yeue his doghter to wyfe. whan this was comynly shewyd *and* know, and othis sworñ on euery Syde, al this trewely to kepe, Anothyr thynge was spokyn be-twen them, bothe that Pryuely, that Macmurgh ne sholde no more strangeres brynge into the londe; And thay that he hadd broght, as Sone as he hadd leynystere in good Pees, he shold Sende them home, and delyuere the londe of hame. Capitulum ix^m. Ter. *Eun.* IV. vii. 19. *filium suum Cuchurum.* *statim remitteret.*

[CHAPTER X.]

Aftyr that the Pees was thus made, the hoste departyd on his halue. Sone there-aftyr come Morice, Geraudis Sonne *, Robert-is Brodyr, of whom we Spokyn ar this, Wyth x Knyghtis and xxx^ti Squyeris, and two hundred fotemen, and londid at Capitulum x^m. [*Fol. 5 b.]

A.D. 1169. A man full queynt, trow trogh al thynge, & stalwarth, & stydfast of word, & of hert symple, & shamffast as a mayd. Wan Macmorgh & Robert hyt wysten, thay weren ful glad, & bolder þan thay before were: thay come to ham sone wyth þe oste þat thay had.

Macmurgh determines to attack Dublin; and goes, accompanied by Fitzstephen. Macmorgh be-thoght hym of the mych vnryght that þe men of deuelyng hym hadden done, & hys fader all-so, many sithe: he assembled hys hostes, & redied hym to wend thedere. Boot Robert byleft with somdell of þe meyne, fore to rere hym a castell at a place that me clepeth þe karryke, & ys twey myle out of weysford; & Moryce went wyth hym. Macmorgh, as mayster & leder of the host, & cheuetayn of al. In lytell whyle, all þe contreys about dyuelyn, wyth robynge & bernyng & sleyng,

[1 MS. wepen.] weren[1] neght I-broght to noght. The sitezeyns of dyuylyn, whan thay thys wysten, thay sentten to ham, & besoghten pees, & yaue ham so mych gold & sylver that non end was at har wylle,

The citizens submit and acknowledge Macmurgh as their lord. & good ostages, & othes I-[s]wore that þay sholden to Macmorgh trew be, & hym knowleche þan-forward as lord & prynce. Fro that tyme that thys was y-do, ther was noon Iryshman yn leynnester, of hey kyne ne of low, that for seruesse[2] of englyssemen ne yeldet hym to Macmorgh, so þat þer was noght of þe lond-folke þat all nas subyett to hym, & redy to hys wylle.

[2 *for* ferdnesse?]

[CHAPTER XI.]

O'Conor makes war on O'Brien of Limerick & of thomond. the kyng of connaght, Oconoghur, gaddered hys [*Fol. 6 a.] hostes for to wer vpon Obreen. Obreen sent *to mamorrowz, for allyaunce that was betwen ham, that he shold hym helpe. he spake per-of to Robert & to Moryce, & bad ham that þay shold go theder for to helpe Obreen. Thay name har men wyth ham, & wenten ynto thomond, and ffonden Oconoghur, that stryffly stode ayeyn ham, & many fyghtes ham yaue. Bot the dysconfitur turned vpon Oconoghur, & many of hys men wer I-sleyn, so that wythe shame he most turne ayeyn ynto Connaght. And fro that tym, Obreen wythdrow hym from Oconoghur, & neuer after was subyect to hym as he was thar-by-fore; & the englysh hoste, wyth grett gettynges & with rych yiftes, turned ayeyne yn-to leynestre.

IN thys whyle, wax a grett wreth & a grete stryfe betwyx þe kyng of Connaght, & donoll Obreyn, þe kyng [of] lymeryke,

and sends Fitzstephen and Maurice to oppose him.

O'Conor is defeated, and O'Brien becomes independent of him.

weysford. A man full quent, trew throw al thynge, bolde, and stydfaste of word, *and* of hert sympil, and shamefaste as a mayd // Whan Macmurgh *and* Robert hadd wyttynge of Morice-is comynge, they weryn full glad, and boldyr than thay before were. thay came to tham Sone wyth the hoste that thay hadde / Macmurgh bethoght hym of the mych wronge that the men of Deuelyn to hym hawydyn done, and his fadyr also, many tymys: he assemblid his hostes, *and* made hym redy thedyr forto goo. But Robert lefte wyth some of the meyngne forto rere hym a castel at a Place that is callid the Karryke, and is two myle out of weysford; And Morice went wyth hym. Macmurgh as gouernoure and ledere of the hoste and capytan of all. In lytell Processe of tyme, al the contreis about deuelyn, wyth Robynge and brennynge *and* kyllynge of pepill, weryn al-meste broght to noght // The Citseynys of deuelyn, whan thay of this had wyttynge, thay Sendyn *and* besoght Pees, and yaue hame so myche golde and Siluyr that none ende was at har will, and good hostagis, *and* othis Sworne that thay Sholdyn to Macmurgh be trewe, *and* hym knowlege as lord and Prynce. Fro that tyme that this was done / ther was none Irysh-man in leynystre, of hey kyn ne of low, but that, for fere of Englysh-men, thay yaue hame to Macmurgh, So that ther was none of the londe-pepill, that al nas subiecte to hym, and redy to his wille /

A.D. 1169.

grares Dublinenses injurias.

ad exterminium fere reducto.

[CHAPTER XI.]

IN this tyme, rose grete debate and wrete be-twyxe the kynge of Connaght, and Donalde Obreyn, the kynge of lymerike, and of thomonde. the kynge of Connaght, Oconghoure, gaderid his hostes forto werre vp-on obreyn. Obreyn Sende to Macmurgh, for allyaunce that was betwen ham, that he sholde hym helpe. He Spake therof to Robert *and* to Morice, *and* bade them that th[a]y sholde go thedyr forto helpe obreyn. Thay, and har men wyth hame, *and* wentyn Into thomonde, and foundyn oconghoure, that styfly stode a-yennes hame, *and* many fightes hame yaue. But the dis-comfyture turned vp-on oconghoure; *and* many of his men were sleyn, So that wyth shame he mvste tvrne into connaght. / And fro that tyme, Obreyn wythdrowe hym from oconghoure, and neuer aftyr was subiecte to hym as he was ther-to-forn. And the Englysh hoste, wyth grete gettynges *and* wyth ryche yftis, turned ayen Into Leynystre.

Capitulum xj^m^. [Fol. 6 a.]

post varios conflictus ubique victoria potitus.

[CHAPTER XII.]

A.D. 1169. Macmurgh aspires to be king of all Ireland.

Macmoro3w3ch sawe the englysshe-men so stalwarth that no power myght ham wythstond. he bethoght hym of thynge that was passed, & that sume of hys eldre to-fore hym hadden somtyme the kynge-dome of all Irland, & that al the lond was subyet to hym: he wold, by hys myght, by ryght of hys eldren, brynge hyt yn-to the self state, that al þe lond shold be vnder hys lordshyppe, as hyt was wndre hys eldren to-fore hys tym. Of þys tynge he spak preuely wyth Robert, & wyth Moryce, & besoght har consayll therof; And þay hym answerd, & seiden, that 'lyghtly that myght be done, yf he wold make come more plente of englyssh men ynto þe lond.' he bad ham well þorwe, that thay sholden yn al manere senden after more of har kyn & frendshype. & for thay shold the bettyre wyll haue ther-to, he profred ham to yeue hys eldest doghtre to on of ham, whych hyre so wold, wyth all hys lond aftyr hys day. bot, fore euery of ham had wyf & I-spoused that tyme, after mych spech, & many dalyaunce ther-of at thys consaylle, thay thoght þat he, to the erle Rychard, (of whom we haue ar thys I-spoke, & to whom he behete the same doghter ther-to-fore at Brystowe,) hys lettres shold send on thys maner: "℄ Dermot Macmorgh, pryince of leynestre, to Rychard, Gylbertes son, erle of strugoyl, sendeth grettynge. If þou rekenest the tyme that ys Igoo, as well as we that nede haue, our mone nys ycome to þe no rather than hys tyme. Storkes & swalewes, & oþer somer foules, we haue aftyre I-loked: thay comen, & wyth þe cold north-westre wynd þay ben awey ywent. Bot thy comynge, that we so mych haue desyred & so longe I-loked after, nether estren wyn[d]e, ne noon other, vs ne hath I-send, as thou vs be-hete. þerfor, that thou ne hast y-dene troght some grete lette, hastyly be about to do; for that wer al our gladnes, that thou hast swyth. If þou stalwardly comest, & wyth good myght, the four partyes of Irland shal sone be turned to þe fyft." Whan the erle had thys I-hard, he was yn many thoghtes; & aftyr many selcouth *& dyuers redes, at the last he bethoght hym, that so fewe men as weren yn-to the lond I-come ther-to-fore, hadden yn so lytyll whyll so well I-sped of har aduentures: he name to hym the better herte, & thynge

Fitz-stephen and Maurice, whom he consults, advise him to bring over more English-men.

He sends a letter to Earl Richard urging him to come over.

[*Fol. 6b.]

[CHAPTER XII.] A.D. 1169.

MAcmurgh sawe the Englysh-men so bolde, that no man myght ham wythstond: he be-thoght hym of thynge that was passyd, and that some of his eldryn to-fore hym haddyn some tyme the kyngedome of al Irland, and that al the land was subiecte to hym. he wolde, by his myght / by ryght of eldryn, brynge hit Into the same state, that al the londe sholde be vndyr his lordshipe, as hit was * Vndyr His eldryn to-fore His tyme. Of this thynge He Spake wyth Robert *and* wyth Moryce, and be-soghte har consayle vp-on this. And thay hym answerid, *and* sayd, that 'lyghtly that myght be done, yf he wolde make come more Plente of Englysh-men into the londe.' He Prayed ham, that in al haste thay sholde sende aftyr more of hare kyn *and* hare frendis. and for thay sholde haue the bettyr will therto, he profered hame to yeue his eldyst doghtyr to one of ham, whych hyr so wolde, *with* al the londe aftyr his day. but, for euery of hame hadd wyfe, and spoused that tyme, Aftyr mych spech, *and* many delyaunce therof at this consayle, thay thoght that he, to the erle richard (of whom we haue ar this spoke, and to whom he promysyd the same doghtyr there-to-for at Brystowe,) his letteres sholde sende on this manere // " Dermot Macmurgh, Prince of leynystere, to Richard, Gylbertes sone, Erle of strugoil, sendyth gretynge. If ye haue rekenyd the tyme that is I-goo, as wel as we that nede haue, oure compleynte is not come to yow no radyr than this tyme. Storkys and swalewes, and othyr Somyr fowlis, we haue aftyr a-waytid: thay comyn; and *with* the colde north weste wynde thay ben away I-went. But youre comynge, that we so mych haue desyrid, and so longe lokid aftyr, nethyr estryn wynd, ne none othyr, vs ne hath sende, as ye vs promysid. Ther-for [as] ye ne haue this doñe but throgh some grete lette, hastely be a-but to do; for that were al oure gladnys, that ye haste blywe. Yf ye boldely come, and wyth good streynth, the foure Parties of Irland shal sone be turned to the fyfte" // Whan the Erle hadd this hard, he was in many thoghtis; and aftyr many and dyuers thoghtes, at the laste he be-thoght hym, that so few men as weryn into the londe y-come ther-to-fore, haddyn in so lytill tyme so wel y-spede of har aduentures: he hade the bettyr herte, and thynge that he dowtted

Capitulum xijm.

ad avita et antiqua jura.

[*Fol. 6 b.]

hoc facile fieri posse.

legitime copula gaudebat uterque.

Ovid, *Ep. Her.* ii. 7.

circio jam flante nec favonius nec eurus.

de facili convertentur

A. D. 1169–70. The Earl resolves on the enterprise.

that he douted myche ther-by-fore to begyne, he wax tho the bolder to tak an hond. Fro that tyme, al hys thoght & all hys wylle was, nyghte & day, wyth all hys myȝth to wend' in-to Irland'. He went hym to þe kyng henry, & hym swith be-soght þat he sholde delyuer hym hys londes þat sholden be hys by ryght of herytage, other yeue hym leue to do hym yn adventur, lond' to purchace yn vnked land'.

A.D. 1170.

[CHAPTER XIII.]

He sends Reymond le Gros to Ireland, who lands near Waterford, ab. May 1, 1170.

Whan the Kynge wyst hys entent, whoder he wold go, he ne yaue hym fully leue, ne fully hym ne warned; bot wyth such leue as he had, he dight hym þe wynter tyll the begynny[n]ge of Maye. He sent to-for hym ynto Irland A knyght that was I-called Reymond' le gras;—wyth hym, x knytghtes, & fourty Squyers, & four score bowmen;—A man ful hardy & stalwarde, & well proued yn wepne, Robertis neueu, & Moryces, har eldest brother, sone. Thay arryued at a place i-called dundoneuile, four myle a south halfe Waterford; & ther thay arered a dyche, & a feble castel vpon, of yardes and turues[1]. The men of Watterford, & wyth ham Malaghelyn of olan, thys waren I-ware that thay y-hadden such neghborhede ful loth, & toke ham to rede, þat þay wolden vpon ham, ar mo com to ham. Thay assembled ham togeddre, well thre thousand men, & wenten ouer the wattyr of sur, that parteth the twey contres of leynestre & of mounestre, & setten ham yn thre hostes, ful boldely for to assayle the englysshe-men with-In har castell. Reymond & hys men—thogh they fewe wer, they wer nat feynt—with vneuenly host wenten out & assembled wyth ham. Bot, as no wonder was, so few men ne myght nat all priuely fyghten ayeyn so many, thay turned ham aye to har recet. the other wenedeñ that thay departed yn dyscomfyte; thay brakeñ har sheld. Inn, & wentteñ aftyr: & thay war nat fully wythyn þe yate, that some of ham ner rather In than þe englyssh. Reymond saw that he & hys weren yn gret perylle, & vpon poynt to lese the lyfe. he be-cryed hys felewes, & turned stalwarthly vpon her formen[2]; & þe fyrste that come yn, he claue hym the heed, & throgh slaght of that

He is attackt by the Waterford men and O'Phelan, and is forced to retreat to his camp.

[1] MS. iurues, *or* inrues.

[2] men in front.

mych ther-be-for to begyn, he wax than the boldyr to take an honde. Fro that tyme, al his thoght and al his will was, nyght and day, wyth al his myght to wende into Irland. He went then to the kynge, and besoght hym that he shold delyuere hym his londis that sholdyn be his by ryght of heritage, othyr yeue hym leue to do hym in aduenture, londe for to Purchase in vnkyd land. A.D. 1169-70. *vel in exteris regionibus se fatis et fortunae committendi licentiam daret.*

[CHAPTER XIII.] A.D. 1170.

Whan the kynge vndyrstode his entente, whedyr he wolde goo, he yaue hym not full leue, ne fully be-name hym not; but *with* suche leue as he hadd, he dight hym the wyntyr till the begynnynge of may / he Sende to-for hym into Irland a knyght that was callid[1] Reymond Legras;—wyth hym, x knyghtis and fourty Squyeris, *and* foure score bowmen;—A man ful hardy *and* bolde *and* wel proued in wepyn, Robert-is eme [2], *and* Morices, hare eldyts brodyr, sone. Thay londyd at a place that is y-callid Dundonenyld, foure Mile on the Sowth syde of watyrford; and there they rerid a dyche, and a febill castel vpon, of Iardis *and* turues *. The men of Watyrford, and wyth ham Malaghelyn Of olan, this waryn y-ware that thay haddyn such neghboris, that ham were loth [3]; and toke ham to consayle, that thay wolde vp-on ham, ar mo come to hame. Thay gaderid ham to-gaddyr, wel iij^e. Mł. men, *and* wentyn ouer the watyr of Sure, that partyth the two contreis, that is to Say leynystre and mounestre, And settyn ham in thre hostis, ful boldely forto assayle the Englysh-men *with*-In har castel. Reymond and his men (thegh thay fewe were, they were not feynte) *with* few pepill wentyn out, *and* mete *with* hame. But, as no woundyr hit was, so few men myght not al plenary fyghteñ ayeyn so many, that turned ham to thare recette. the othyr wende that thay depertid in descomfite; thay brakyn har sheldrun, *and* wentyn aftyr. *and* thay were not fully wythin the gate, that some of hame nere radyr In than the Englisħ. Reymond saw that he and his were in grete Pereil, *and* on Poynte to lese here lyfe. he cried on his fellowis, *and* tvrned boldely vp-on here enemys. and the fryst that come In, he clewe his hede. *and* throgh deth of that o man, al the

Capitulum xiij^m. *quasi licentia, ironica namque magis quam vera.*

[2 *eme*, uncle, is 'nephew' in this MS.]

[*Fol.6b.]

ex virgis et cespite.

de plano resistere non potuit.

intra valvas vix plene suspensas certatim intrando susceperunt.

[1] R. Legras. [3] Exterorum viciniam suspectam habentes, v. 248.

A. D. 1170. mañ, all the ost was dyscomfyte, & tok hañ to flyght. The o*per* ham folwed yñ-to all þe pleyñ, & leyd hañ oñ so, þat yñ lytell whyll thay slowe of hañ fyfe[1] hundred & mo; & þe most p*arte* of þe other fellen adoñ yñ-to þe see, of þe heye rokes, & drent hañ-selfe. In thys fyght, was a knyght that hete Wyllyañ ferand, that dydde ou*er*-well & aboue all other: he was a mañ that hade semblant as thoght he wer ðñ the mich yuell, & *per*-for he put hym-selue[2] alwey ther *the most *per*ille was; ffor he ne raght thegh deth come betwene hym & hys yuell, ar hyt war to mych I-smyt vpoñ hym. Her þe pryd of wat*er*ford felle; her all hys myght went to noght; her-of come the Englysshe hope & comfort; & to the Iresshe, dred & wanhope; ffor hyt was neu*er* ther-to-for I-herd, that of so fewe men, so grett a slaght was done. Bot lyder consaylle thay dyddeñ þer-aft*er*, that turned ham to mych cruelte; ffor whañ the maystry was al har, & al har fomeñ ouercome, In þe fyght wereñ ytake well thre score meñ & teñ, that ham yoldeñ, & wereñ the heghest & the rychyst of al the sitè, such þat þay myght haue had for ham the sitè delyu*ered*, or els as myche catel as thay wolden desyr. Heruy of Mou*n*tm*orthy*, that to hañ was ycome, hym thrydsome of knyghtes, & Reymond, vp dyu*ers* domes strouen what meñ sholde do wyth har prysons[3]; ffor Reymond trauayllet about for to dylyu*ere* hañ, as a mañ of reuthful mode, & þus seyd to hys feres: "lordynges, what ys vs to done of our wreched *prisoners*? I sey nat that man[4] shal on any man*er* spar hys fomañ; bot thay beth nat now fomen, both[5] beth meñ nat rebelle, bot yñ bataylle for to defend[6] har contrey ou*er*come. Me thynketh thay beth now yñ such state, that me ogh*t* bettyr haw m*ercy* of hañ & yeve hañ lyfe, for to yeue other ensample to be boxom, than cruely to do hañ to deth, whar-throgh þat other, throgh ferdnesse of trust, þe lasse to yeld hañ to vs." Whañ Reymond had such wordes I-seyde, yn al þe folke but Hervey was moste wi[lle][7] to *grau*nt ham lyf, Arose vp Heruy amonge

He turns on his assailants, and repels them with heavy loss.

[* Leaf 7.]

William Ferand shows special bravery.

Seventy men were taken prisoners; and it is debated what to do with them.

Reymond tries to save them;

but Hervey opposes him.

[1] MS. lyfe. [2] MS. sleue. [3] pryson = prisoner. [4] MS. maner.
[5] but: Sed hi non hostes jam, sed homines.—*Op.* v. 250. [6] MS. defond.
[7] The ink has perisht: 'et murmure populi cum quodam quasi favore subsecuto.' Gir. Camb., *Exp. Hib.* c. xv.—*Op.* v. 252, Rolls Series.

hoste was dys-comfite *and* toke ham to flyght / The othyr ham folwid̄ into al the Playñ, and leyde on ham. So that in lytyl space of tyme thay kyllyd̄ of ham v. C. *and* mo; and the most Parte of the othyr fellyn adovñ into the see, of the hey Rokys, and dreynt ham-selfe // In this fyght was a knyght that was callid̄ Wil*l*iam ferrand, that did ful wel *and* abowe al othyr; [1]he was a man that hade semblant as thegh he were on the mych yuel; and therfor he Putte hym-Selfe at tymys ther the moste Peryl was. For he roght not thegh dethe come betwen hym and his Sekenys, or hit were mych grow on hym[1] / Here the Pryde of Watyrforde felle; here al his myght went to noght; her-of come the Englysh̄ hope and confort̄; and to the Irysh̄, dred and wanhope. For hit was neuer ther-to-fore herde that, of So few men, so grete a slaghte was done. But a lewid consayle thay diddyn, that ther-aftyr turned ham to myche cruelte. For whan the Mastry was al hare, *and* al hare enemys ouercome, In the fyght weryn take wel iij^{e} score men *and* teñ that ham yeldyn, *and* weryn the beste and the rycheste of the Cite, Such that thay myght haue hade for them the Cite delyuerid̄, or els as mych ryches as thay wolde desyre. Heruey of montmurthy, that to ham was come, hym thyrdsome of knyghtis, *and* Reymond̄, vp-on dyuers consaylis thoghten what thay sholde do wyth har Prysoneris. For Reymond laborid̄ for thar delyverance, as man of pitefull herte / And thus sayd to his fellowis: "Lordynges, what is vs to done wyth oure wrechid̄ presoners? I Sey not that man shal on any maner spare his enemys; but thay byth nat now enemys; but byth men not rebell, but in bataill forto defende har contrey ouercome. Me-thynkyth thay byth now in such state, that we owyth bettyr haue mercy of ham *and* yeue ham lyfe, forto yeue othyr ensampill to be boxume, than cruely to do ham to deth; wher-for otheris wil truste the lasse to yelde ham to vs." *Whan Reymond̄ Hade Suche Wordys y-Seyde, and al the fellowshippe Was most about to graunt ham lyfe, Aros vp heruey ney

A.D. 1170.

ab altis in mare rupibus praecipitati sunt infiniti.

superbia cecidit.

horror . . desperatio.

septuaginta cives.

pecuniam infinitam.

de captiris nostris.

potius . . pietas ad exemplum, quam crudelitas ad tormentum.

[*Fol.7 a.]

[1-1] vir carne quidem infirmus, sed corde firmissimus: imminentem, ut videbatur, leprae malitiam morte nimirum praevenire desiderans tam praematura quam praeclara.—*Op.* v. 249.

A.D. 1170. 'Enough of Mercy! Did Alexander and Caesar win by it?

hame al, & thys hamꝫ seyd: "Inogh Reymond openly to vs hath spoke of mercy & almes-dedes, vnked landes I-wonne, & nat wyth slagh & wyth brenny[n]ge. Wheder Alexander & Iulius Cesar, that werenꝫ lordes of al þe worldꝫ, wonnen londes by such wey, I wold Reymond wold me answer. Whan thay comenꝫ to vs vel arrayede to fyghtenꝫ, If þay hadde I-won ouer-hand & vs ouercome, wolden thay, for almesse & for reuth, haw had mercye of vs? nay, I trow nat. þerfor out-chese onꝫ of two: Otherꝫ do manly thynge, wherꝫ-fore we bene ycome; & the folke þat ys rebbell ayeyn vs, wyth-outten any noyse, wyth wepne hertely brynge out of dawes; Other, yf we shollenꝫ do almes dede on henꝫ, & hamꝫ sparenꝫ, as Reymond hath seyd, out we wend to ourꝫ shyppes, & turne ayeynꝫ, & let we the wreched men hold har lond, & brouken wythouten any chalange." Heruyes dome lyket bettre than Reymondes; & weren the Cytezeyns to deth Idemed. Thay ne hadden no wone of warytres; & þerfor þey ladden hamꝫ to þe clyf of þe see, & put hamꝫ adoun, & drent ham.

Either kill the rebels quietly, or go home!'

As no gallows are handy, the rebels are drownd.

[CHAPTER XIV.]

Earl Richard Struguil

The men-tyme, the Erl Rychard, wyth the powerꝫ that he had arayed, was y-come to south wales; & whanꝫ he hadde wyth * gret reuerence y-done hys pylrimage at sent dauyes, he put hym to saylle, & hade good wynd, came ynto Irland with two hundret knythtes & otherꝫ, morꝫ than a thousand.* He arryued at weyseford on seynt Bertylmewes euenꝫ: Than was fulfylled a prophecye that Merlynꝫ seyd of hys comynge; 'þe brond shal come to-fore þe borned fyrꝫ; And rygh as the spark maked the brond come, Also þe brond shal make the fyr come after.' Anoþer prophecye, seynt Molynge seyd of that same: 'A mych man shall erne to-fore; & þe most heeddes of desmond & ek of leynestre he shal defouly; & wyth streynth he shall noblych the wey opne to the wepned.' Amorow, whan the tythynge of hamꝫ was I-spronge, Reymond went hym to the Erle with furty knyghtes with mych gladnes; & amorow, after þe holy-daye, Thay went comynly al to þe syte of Waterford, & assaylled the toun ful fersly; & twyes thay werenꝫ rebuked, & ful stalwarhly, of þe Cytezeyns. Reymond, that by pruueaunce & graunt of ham al was ymade

[*Fol.7 b.]

lands at Waterford, Aug. 23, fulfilling prophecies of Merlin and the Irish Saint Moling.

Reimund joins him. They assault Waterford, Tuesday, Aug. 25.

amonge ham al, *and* thus ham Sayde: "I-nowe Reymond opynly to vs hath Spoke of mercy and almes-deddes, vn-kyd landis to wynñe *and* nat wyth Slaght *and* wyth brennynge. whedyr Alexandyr *and* Iulyus Cesar, that weryn lordys of al the worlde, wonnen londis by such wey, I wold Reymond wolde me answere. whan thay commyn to vs wel arrayed to fyghten, If thay had the bettyr, *and* vs had ouercome, woldyn thay, for almesse and for Pite, haue had mercy of vs? Nay, y trow not. ther-for chese oñe of two: Othyr to do manly thynge, wher-for we ben come; and the Pepill that is rebel ayeynnes vs, wythouten eny noyse, wyth wepyn hertely berewys ham of lyfe / Othyr, yf we shall do almysdede on them, and ham spare, as Reymond hath Sayd, go we to oure shippis, *and* turnne ayeyne, *and* lete we the wrechyd pepil holde har lond, *and* kepyn *with*out any chalange." Herueyes Iugement Plesid bettyr than Reymondes; *and* weryn the Citteseynnes to deth demyd. Thay had no galosis; and therfor thay laddyn ham to the clyfe of the See, and put ham adouñ, *and* drovnde ham al. A.D. 1170.

Cum ad nos expugnandos instructis aciebus advenerunt.

membris confractis, in maris praecipitium dati sunt.

[CHAPTER XIV.]

The men-tyme, the Erle Ry*chard*, wyth the Power that he had arraied, was come to Suth Walis; *and* When he had *with* grete reuerence done his Pylgrymage at Seynt Dauyes, he Put hym to sayle, *and* had good wynd, come into Irland wy[th] two hundryd knyghtis *and* othyr, more than a thousand. he londid at Weysford on Seynt Bartolomewes evyn. Then was fulfillid a pprophesy that Merlynge Sayde of his comynge: "The brond shal come to-for the brennynge fyre, And ryght as the Sparke makid the brond come, Also the brond shall make the fyre come aftyr." Anothyr prophesy, Molynge Sayd of that same: "A mych man shal erne to-for; *and* the moste hedis of desmond and also of leynystre he shal defeuly; and wyth streynth he shal nobelych the wey opyn to the wepenyd." A-morrow, whan the thythyngis spronge, Reymond went to the Erle *with* fourty knyghtis *with* mych gladnys; and amorrow, aftyr the holy day thay went holy to the Cite of Watyrford, and assaylid the toun ful fresly; *and* twyes they weryn rebukyd, *and* ful boldely, of the Citteseynes. Reymond, that by Purueyaunce and graunt of ham

Capitulum xiiij^m.

prophetia Merlini.

prophetia Molyng.

capita conculcans.

bis viriliter repulsi fuissent.

A.D. 1170. prince, & formaⁿ of al the host, sawe & awayted a place good for to assaylle: he cryed & cleped the wepned men to the assaut,

They take Waterford. & þay egrely assayllederⁿ, & brakerⁿ yn-to þe sytè, & folke-mele slowe the merⁿ yⁿ weyes & yⁿ houses, & wanⁿ þe Cẏtè. In rathnyldes tour̃ wereⁿ twey rẏche merⁿ ytake, bot þrogh prayer̃ of *Macmorgh*, that theder̃ was thanⁿ I-come, he was y-hold alyue.

Mac-murgh's daughter Eve is married to Earl Struguil. *Macmorgh* broght hys doghtyr̃ *with* hẏm̃, Eue by name, & spoused hyr̃ to the Erle, & maderⁿ fast sekernesse betweⁿ ham. Wanⁿ thys was ydo al, þe Erle left merⁿ for to kepe the cytè, & turned hym *with* the hoste to deuylyⁿ.

[CHAPTER XV.]

Macmorgh wyst that myche of the power̃ of har̃ lond was I-come to helperⁿ ham̃ of dyuelyⁿ, & hadderⁿ beset all þe wodde weyes & þe narow weys thetherward: he left tho weẏes, & lad the hoste throght the montaẏnes of Glyndelagh, al harmeles, rẏght to the sytè. These cyteȝeyns, ou*er* al other̃, hated wereⁿ of hym, & that was no wonder̃; ffor^e ẏn some tẏme thay slowerⁿ hys fadyr̃ yⁿ the cytè; & aft*er* the harme, thay dydde hym̃ mych shamⁿ, for̃ thay burryd an hounde *with* hym yn the pute that he was yn I-leyde. Thay sent messagers to þe Erle, & namely the Erchebysshop laurence, & besoghterⁿ pees; & as thay wereⁿ spekyng of pees, on oon half was Reymond, & on the other̃ halue a ful hardy knẏght, Myles of Cogan, *with* ẏonglẏnges well coueytouse of battaylle & of gettyng. Thay assaylled the Cytè, & breken In, & wan þe Cytè, wyth gret slaght of þe sẏtȝeyns.

They march, thro' Glenda-lough hills, to Dublin.

Reimund and Miles of Cogan assail and take Dublin.

[*Fol. 8a.] * Natheles, the best p*ar*te of ham, wyth þe rychest & the derwarthest thyngys þ*at* thay haddeⁿ, yn botes escapeden, & wenten yn-to þe north ylondes, wyth hastoyl, that was maẏstre yn the cyte, & har lodesmanⁿ. That day byfel two Muracles yn the cyte: that on of the Croice, yn the moder̃ chẏrche of þe trẏnẏte, whyche the Cytȝeyns wolderⁿ haue I-ladde *with* ham yn-to the ylandes yn the see; & for nothyng, thay ne myghth yt wecchen out of þe place. That other̃, of a sergeant that hadde I-robbet the erche-bysshoppes paleys, & þ*er*-aft*er* come to-for þe rode, & offred a peny: fyrst, & efte-sone, & at eu*er*y tym, the peny stert ayeẏne to hym. he bethoght hym that god was nat wel I-quenyted of the robbery

Hasculf and the richest folk escape.

al was made Prynce and forman of al the hoste, Saw and a-waytyd a place goode forto assayle. he cried *and* callid the wepenyd men to the assaute and thay egyrly assaylid, and brakyn Into the Cite, and kyllid the men in weyes and in houses, and wan the Cite. in rathnyldys toure weryn two ryche men take, *and* thay both were be-hedyd. Macsaghlyn of olan was also take, but throgh Prayer of Macmurgh, that ther was than y-come, he was holde alyue. Macmurgh broght his doghtyr wyth hym, Eue by name, and Spousid hyr to the Erle and madyn fast syckyrnys betwene *Ham // Whan this was done al / the Erle Lefte men forto Kepe the Cite *and* turnyde hym *with* the hoste to deuelyn //

A.D. 1170.

Melaghlin O'Phelan is taken, but kept alive.

[*Fol. 7 b.]

[CHAPTER XV.]

Macmurgh vndyrstode that myche of the pepill of the contrey was come to helpe ham of the Cite of deuelyn, *and* hadde be-sette al the wodd-weyes and the Narrow-weyes thedyrward. He lefte thay weyes, and lad the hoste throw the montanys of Glyndelagh, al holde and sound, tyl thay come to the Cite. The Citteseynes ouer al othyr hatid Macmurgh; *and* they wer hatyd of hym: and that was no wondyr. For in some tyme thay slowyn his fadyr in the Cite; and aftyr the harme, thay dyd hym moche shame, for thay buryed an hounde *with* hym in the buryles that he was In-leyde. Thay send messangeris to the Erle, *and* namely the archebyschope Laurance, and besoghten Pees; and as thay weryn Spekyn of pees, on oone halue was Reymond and on the othyr syde a ful hardy knyght, Miles de Cogan, *with* yonglynges wel couetos of batail and of getynge: They assaylid the Cite, and brokyn In, *and* toke the Cite *with* grete slaghte of the Citesenes. Natheles, the beste parte of ham, *with* the rychest and the wourdyest thynges that thay haddyn, in botis escapedyn, and wentyn into the north ylondes wyth hastoyl, that was Captayn in the Cite, and har gouernoure / That day befel two Miraclis in the Cite: that one, of the cros in the Cee churche of the trynyte, wych the Citteseynes wold haue take wyth ham into the Ilandys in the see / And for no thyng thay myght not take hit out of the place. That othyr, of a Sergeant that had robyd the archebysshope-is Place; and ther-aftyr come to-for the rode, *and* offerid a peny: fryst, and aftyr, and in euery tyme, the peny styrte ayeyñ to hyñ. he bethoght hym that god was not aplesid of the robery that he had

Capitulum XV^m.

vias nemorosas et arctus

cum cane cires tumulaverunt.

naves et scaphas .. intrantes

sicut in 'Topographia' declaratur. Op. v. 129.

A.D. 1170. that he had y-do: he turned hym than, & let take al that he had y-nom[1], & bar hyt ayeyn, & went to þe rode & offred; & hy[s] offrynge the[r] abode. Whan þe Erl hade a few dayes I-ordyned for the stat of þe Cytè, he left ther Myles de Cogan, keper of þe Cytè & of þe contre, & a *part*ye of þe meyne wyth hym. And by entycement of Mac*morgh*, that bethoght hym of þe old enmyte that he hade to the kynge of Mithe, he went hym to þe contrey, branten, slowen, & robeden, & broghten the contre to noght, for none ne durst hym wythe-stond. Oconghur of Conaght saw that he was the next—as man that seethe hys neghbors hous berne, he may drede of þe sparkes—he sent Messagers to Mac*morgh* yn thys wordes: "Ayeyne þe fourme of our pees, thou hast imad come yn-to thys lond mych out-comen folke. þe whylle that thou held the yn thy leynystre, we hyt tholleth euynly; Now thou, as man that naght ne the thynkest on thyn oth, ne no reuth ne hast of thyn ostage, the merres I-sete of thyn eldren lond, vnryghtfullyo ue*r*goste. Make thyn out-comen men wyth-draw, & turne ayeyne, or els sothly we shul the send thy sones heede." Mac*morgh* thys herd, & yaf hym a prout answar, & sent hym to sey, that he ham wold hold, & send afte*r* more & eke more; that he nold neue*r* reste tyl he hadde I-wonne Connaght, wyth the kynge-dome of al þe lond, as hys eldren sumtym hyt hadden to-for hym. Oconnoghur had her of grete dyspyte, & sore was atened, & let smyth of sonnes heed, þat he had hym Itake fore ostage.

Earl Struguil leaves a force in Dublin,

and ravages Meath.

O'Conor of Connaught

reproaches Mac-murgh,

and cuts off his son's head.

[CHAPTER XVI.]

A Council of the Irish clerics is held at Armagh. The country's ill has come from enslaving English children.

Aftyr this, worth gret spech yn-to all þe lond, & mych ferdnesse of the out-comen men. Than gaddered ham al to-gedderes, al the clerkes & the wysmen of þe lond at ardmagh; & of thys folkes comyng, was mych I-spoke, & longe dalyaunce. At þe laste, comynly thay accordeden al her-to, that, for the syn of þe folk, thys mesaduentur ham ys byfal; namely, that whan thay fonden englysshe-men chyldren to sellen, that chepmen & robbers woldene brynge to the lond, thay * were wonet [*Fol.8b.] to by ham, & do ham yn thraldome; & that throgh goddys owne

[1] MS. ymon.

done. he turned hym than, *and* toke al that he toke wyth hym, and bare hit ayeyñ, *and* went to the rode, and offerid; *and* his offerynge ther abode. / When the Erle had a few dayes y-ordaynyd for the state of the Cite, he lefte there myles de Cogan, kepere of the Cite and of the contrey, and a partey of the meynne wyth hym. And by entycement[1] of Macmurgh, that be-thoght hym̃ of the olde enemyte that he had to the kynge of Myth, he went hym to the contrey, brantyn, Slouedyñ and robedyñ, *and* broghten the contrey to noght, for non ne durst hym wythstond. Oconghoure of connaght Saw that he was the nexte, (as a man that seth his evyncrystyñ his house brenne, he may dred the sparkys;) he send messangeres to Macmurgh in these wordis: "Ayeyne the forume of oure pees, thow haste made come into this londe mych strange pepill. the whyle that thow helde the in thy leynystre we hit tollid euynly. Now thow,—as man that noght rekyth of his trouth, ne no pite hauest of thyn hostage,—the meris y-sette[2] of-thyn eldryñ lond, vnryghtfully ouer-goste[3]. Make thy strangeres * Wyth-draw, and turne ayeyne; othyr ellys Sothly we shall the sende thy Sonnys hede." Macmurgh this herde, and to hym yaue a prowte answere, *and* Sende hym to Say, that 'he ham wold holde, and send aftyr more, and eke more, / ande that he wold neuer reste, til he had take *and* conquerid al connaght, with al the kyngdome of al the lond, as his predessessouris had to-for hym.' Oconghoure here-of had grete indignacioñ, and gretly ther-of was grewid; And he comandid to Smyte of his Sones hede, that he yafe hym for an hostage.

A.D. 1170.

[1] *instinctu.*

As Macmurgh hated O'Rourke of Meath (p. 2–4), Meath is wasted.

in insulam advocasti.. aequanimiter sustinuimus.

[2] *metas positas . .* [* Fol. 8a.]

[3] *insolenter excessisti*

indignans Rothericus

[Chapter XVI.]

Aftyr this, Spronge grete Spech in-to al the lond, *and* mych dreded the strange comen men. Than gadderid ham to-gederes al the clerkys and the wysmen of the land at Ardmagh̃; and of this pepil-is comynge, was mych Speche and longe delyaunce. At the last, comynly thay acordid al herto, that, for the synne of the Pepill, this mys-aduenture ham ys by-fall, specialy that whan thay foundyn Englysh-men childryn to sill, that Marchandis and roberes wold bryng to the lond, thay were woned to by ham, and pute ham in thraldome; And

Capitulum xvj^m^.

tam a mercatoribus, quam praedonibus atque piratis

A.D. 1170. wreth hyt was, that as syllers weren̄ to-fore y-broght yn thraldome, also the byggers sholden after: ffor̄ hyt was somtym̄ that the folke of englond—The maner of har kyngdome was al I-hole—whan thay had non̄ other̄ thynge that þay myghten take to, rathar̄ than thay wold any myssayse tholy, Thay wer̄ I-wont to syllen̄ har̄ chyldren & har̄ other̄ kynnesmen̄, botlū ynto Irlond & ynto other̄ londes. Ther̄-for̄ hyt may well be soth, that as the byggers, also þe syllers, oft serued wel, throgh so loly gyltes to be y-broght yn thraldome. Ther̄ hyt was yn þat consaylle be-heght, & by assent of al comynly I-set, that al the englysshe-men̄ yn þe lond that yn thraldome weren̄, shold ben̄ delyuered, & frely let goo whodyr̄so they wold.

The English, rather than suffer, would sell their children.

The Irish resolve to free all English slaves.

[CHAPTER XVII.]

Her-aftyr spronge tythyngges of the Erle & of þe englysshe-men̄ ynto englond; &, as maner ys, mychе me made more; & that the Erl hade apropred to hym, nat only leynestre, bot other̄ londes also, that, by no ryght ne by law, to hym̄ ne to hys wyf longen̄. The kynge sent anoon, & forebeed that, 'out no lond that were yn hys power̄, ne shold no shyppen passe yn-to Irland, ne no maner thynge for to brynge; & al men̄ that yn-to Irland war̄ comen, shold ayeyn come yn-to englande, wyth-yn þe next estre, or̄ they sholden be dysheryted & ex[y]led out of lond for euer.' The Erl saw that he & hys weren̄ narow belad, both of hys men that hym wold leue, & eke that nothynge ne most hym come out of other̄ landes, of þynge that hym nede was: by comune rede of hys men, he sent Reymond ouer to the kynge that was fer̄ yn gascoyne, & thus hym sent to say: "By thy leue, lord, yf y am welle vndyrstond, y went ynto Irland for to help thy trew man, Dermot Macmorgh; þerfor, that al that of hys herytage, other̄ of oþers yn þe lond, almyghty god me hath I-sent, as hyt come of thy graunt & of thy good wylle, also, I wyll that hyt to the turne, to do ther̄-wyth what the lyketh."

Reports are spread in England of Fitz-Gerald's keeping Irish land.

Henry II forbids ships to go to and from Ireland; and orders all English-men home.

Fitz-Gerald sends to Henry II in Gascony,

and yields his Irish conquests to him.

[CHAPTER XVIII.]

Reymond went to the kynge with such mandement; & the whyle that he folwed the kynges court, abydynge hys answer̄, Thomas, the erchebysshop̄pe of Cantrebery [1], was martyred

Thomas a Beket is martyrd.

[1] (*In margin, in a later hand:* The archebushop of canterbury called Tho. Beckett. 1171.)

that, throw godis .his owyn wreth hit was, that as the sylleris weryn to-for broght in thraldome, also the byeris sholdyn be brogh[t] in thraldome aftyr / For hit was somtyme that the pepil of Englanď the maner of har kyngdome was al y-holde: Whan thay had none othyr thynge that thay myght take to, Radyr than thay wolde suffyr any dyssese, thay wold syll har childyr and har othyr kynnes-men, both into Irland *and* into othyr landis. Therfor hit may wel be trouth that, as the byeris, also the Silleris, ofte Seruyď well, throgh So wicked doynge, to be broght in thraldome. There hit was in that consayll promysyď, *and* by assent of al comynly y-Set, that al the Englysh-men in the lond that in thraldome weryn, shold ben delyuerid, and frely lette goo whedyr So thay wolde.

A.D. 1170.

priusquam inopiam ullam aut inedíam sustinerent.

[CHAPTER XVII.]

HEre-aftyr spronge tythyngis of the Erle and of the Englysh-men into Englond; *and* as the maner is, of mych thay mad more; and that the Erle had approperiď to hym, not only leyrystere, but othyr londis also, that, by no ryght ne lawe, to hym ne to his wyfe partenyď // The kynge sende anone, and comandiď that 'no shippe, out of no lond that Partenyth to hym, sholde Passe into Irlanď, Ne no maner thynge forto brynge; and al men that Into Irlanď war comyn, sholde ayeyn goo into Englanď wythin the nexte Estyr, Othyr they sholde be disherytid *and* exiliď out of lond for euer.' The Erle saw that he and his weryn narrow bylad, both of his men that hym wold leue, and also that nothynge shold come out of othyr landis of thynge that he had ned to / he toke consayle of his men, and Sente Reymond ouer to the kynge, that was fere in gascoyn, and thus hym Sende to say: "By youre lycence lord, yf y be wel vndyrstond, y wente into Irlanď forto helpe yowr trew man, Dermot *Macmurgh*. Therfor, that al that of his heritage, othyr of otheres, that y haue in the Land, that almyghty god to me * Hath sende, as hit come of youre graunt *and* of youre good wyle,[1] also y wille that Hit be turne to yow, to do ther-wyth whate Plese yow."

Capitulum xvij^m^.

fama de magnis semper majore, vulgante.

in arcto jam positos.

si bene recordor, sic ad eandem pro libito vestro nutuque redibit.

[*Fol. 8 b.]

[1] *sic*

[CHAPTER XVIII.]

REymond went to the kynge *with* such mandement; *and* the whyle that he folwid the kynges courte, abydynge his answere, Thomas, the archebisshope of Cantreberry, was martiriď

Capitulum xviij^m^.

A.D. 1170. Archbishop Beket sufferd seven years in exile, personally,

yn englond, nat wyth-out mych blame to al þe lond-folk, both lered & lewed. That erchebysshopp, after many-fold martyrdome that he þolled, negh seuen yer that he was banshed out of englond for the ryghtes of holy chyurche, In sore & many wepynges, yn double heer about hys body—þat on, yn styd of shyrth; that oþer, yn stydde of breche—nyght & day yn holy prayer & redynge

and also thro' his persecuted kinsfolk,

yn holy wrytte; & o thynge that meste sorow broght to hys hert, that al hys kyn, men & wommen, yonge & old, wommen lyggyne yn chyld-bed, & old men that fore eld yroked weren yn her cradelys, & all other, clerkes & lewed, that me myght wytt that sybrede or other frendshypp hadden to hym, al thay weren I-dryue out of englond; & al they that weren of eld that þay myghty othes swer, swaren vpon the masse-boke that, as sone as thay come ouer the see, thay shold go to þe erchebysshoppe,

[*Fol.9a.] who sufferd for him.

& shew hym the * wrechednesse that þay suffred for hys sake; ffor he shold, for reuth of ham, turnen hys hert, & graunt þe kynges wylle of þynge that he desyred. After such martyrdomes, and many other þat he tholled yn hys lyue, whyche no manly

Then came his chief Martyrdom.

hert may bethynke to ful end, the hey martyrdome, that broght hys soule to þe blysse of heuyn, & hys body to wyrshyppe yn hert, other many þynges be-tydden that men Aght well vnderstond; þat ayeyns hys fomen yede, opyn heed, & opened þe chyrch dur whyche the monkes hadden I-loke, & seyd þat 'men ne shold no castell make of holy chyrche'; & hys holy croune bade ayeyn

He was slain in Canterbury Cathedral by four knights, before the Altar.

the naked swerdes for to smyte, & that yn the modyr chyrche, heghest of al þe lond, & to-for the weued, that he of four knyghtes, woder than wood houndes, tholled four woundes yn the holy croun, & [n]on without,—so as þe croun ogt betokne of proteccion to clergy,—that hi deth tholled yn the north syde of þe chyrche, whyche betokneth Ihesu crystes passyon. & thus goddys owne knyghte, wythouten any ferdnesse, tholled deth; yn hys lyf of thys

The Apostle Thomas died on Dec. 21; Beket on Dec. 29.

world, chaunged wel selyly for þe lyf that euer shal lest without end. And as seynt Tomas-ys day, Apostle, ys þe fyft day afor yold, so ys thys Thomas day þe fyft day after. That Thomas was candel I-set yn þe este of þe world; Thys Thomas yn þe west. [That] was lyght to aly chyrche yn hyr yough, as [Thys] yn hyr eld;

in England, not wyth-out grete reprefe to al the land-pepill, both lerid and lewid. That archebisshope, aftyr manyfolde martyrdome that he Sufferid, / ney vij^{e}. yere that he was banneschid' out of Englond for the ryght of holy church, In sore and many wepyngis, In doubill here about his body,—that on in styd of shyrt, that othyr in styd of breche,—Nyght and day, in holy prayeris and redynge in holy writte. And o thyng that meste Sorrow wroght to his hert, that al his kynnes-men, yonge and old, women lyggynge in chyldbed, and olde men that for elde yrokyd weryn in her cradelis, and al othyr, clerkys othyr lewid, that thay mygh[t] know, that weryn of his kyñ, Othyr frendshipe haddyn to hym, al thay weryn dryw out of Englond'. And al thay that weryn of elde, that thay myght othys swere, Swaryn on the masboke, that 'as Sone as thay come ouer the See, thay shold go to the archebyschope, and Shew hym the mesury that thay Sufferid for his Sake;' For he sholde, for Pite of ham, turnen his hert, and graunt the Kynge his wyll of that, that he desyrid. Aftyr Such martirdomes, *and* many othyr that he sufferid in his lyfe,—the whych in no mannes hert may be thoght to ful end',—The hey martirdome, that broght his Soule to the blysse of hewyñ, and his body to vyrchip in Erth, Othyr many thyngis be-fel that men aght wel vndyrstond; that ayenes His enemys yede, opyn hede, *and* oppenyd the church-durre, whych the Monkes haddyn y-loke, and sayd that 'men shold not no castel make of holy church.' And his holy crovne bare ayeyn the nakyd Swerdes forto smyte, and that in the modyr chyrch, heghist of al the lond, and to-for the auter / that he of foure knyghtes, wodyr than wode houndis, *th*olled Foure woundes in the holy croun, *and* [n]on wyth-out,—So as the crovñ oght to be know tokyn of protexcion to clergy,—that he deth Sufferid in the north syde of the church, whych be-tokenyth Ihesu crystes Passion. and thus godis owyn knyght, wyth-out eny ferd, sufferyd' deth; and his lyfe of this world, chaunged' for the lyfe that euer shal leste wythout end'. And as seynte thomas-is day the apostyl, is the V. day afor yolde, So is this Thomas-is day, the V. day aftyr. That thomas was candil y-sette in the Este of the World; This thomas in the weste. [1] [That] was lyght to holy churche in hyr youth, as [This] in hyr elde; and

A.D. 1170.

septennalis fere exilii.

tam femorali quam corporali.

nec aetati parcente, nec sexui

tam miserabili sanguinis universi proscriptione.

quod ipse furibundis hostibus templi fores aperuit, et aperto vertice gladiis occurrens.

et nullum extra.

[1] *ille nascenti ecclesiae lumen dedit, hic senescenti.*

A.D. 1170–1. As the Apostle gave his blood for the early Church, so Beket gave his for the aged one.

& as he [the Apostle] commenced holy chyrche with hys blode whan che was arerynge, Also thys, [Beket,] whan she had longe I-stond & wox yn eld, & redy was to falle, wyth hys blode he ryght hyr vp, & sette hyr yn ryght stydde. And as he t[oke hym] selue to quellers ffor to arer̃ þe seknes of holy chyrche, also thys ne douten nat to taken̄ hym-self to kene swerdes, & lydder̃ men hondes, for̃ þe fredome of holy chyrche to sawe vnwemmed. The fourme of hys martyrdome, twey verses a latyn shortly comprehendeth, that thus mych ben to vnderstond: "ffor̃ crystes spouse, vnder crystes tyme, yn crystes chyrche, crystes owne leman deyed." Amonge al the halwen̄ that almyghty god wroght yn erth, of selcouth myraclys for to showen̄ har̃ holynesse,—as the blynd to see, the lame to gon̄, þe dombe to speke, the deue to hyr̃, lasers to clense, paralys to festnen, y-dropesie & al other̃ manere yueles to helen̄, the dede to areren, yuel gostes to quethen̄, & al þe four̃ elementes to har̃ commaundement hadden̄,—he alon̄ was y-wyrshypped with al these, & more þer-to, thar̃-to-for̃[1] was nat herd ne sey; ffor̃ a man̄ that hade hys eghen I-draw out of hys heed, & hys manly menbres y-kytte of & y-cast awey, come to hys tombe; & þrogh̄ besechynḡ of hym, god hym sent newe. Of thys holy martyr̃, Merlyn seyd thus yn hys prophecye: "A newe martyr̃ shal̄ aryse with newe myracles, that yn the worldes endynḡ, yn the west of þe world, by specyal vertue, mannys lymmes out I-draw & out I-corue, ayeyn shald make come. Sorow shal turne ynto yoye, whan̄ þe sonnes shal sle þe fadyr̃ yn hys modyr̃ wombe; prynces & hey men * shal come out of þe este yn-to the weste, & lout ham to þe newe martyres fot-stappes." Al þys was openly I-seyd of þe holy martyr̃ seynt Thomas; he was þe whet corne þat fel yn erth, & mych fruyt forth broght. In þe yer̃ of burth-tyme .xlviij.; of hys sacryfiynge .viij.; of hys exil .vij.; yn the end of Decembre, yn þe yere of our̃ lordes yncarnacion .M.C.lxxj.; & was poppe of Rome, Alexandre the thyrd; Emperour̃ of Almayne, ffrytheryke; kynge of ffraunce, lowys. Whan the wentyr was I-passed, Dermot Macmorgh deyed, þe begynenynḡ of may, & was bured at ffernes. A man grett of body; hardy yn fyght amonge hys folke; of lange & lome cryynge yn fyght, hys voys was somdel hors; leuer hym

Among all saints, for

[1 that tofore]

Beket alone were all kinds of miracles performd. He got a man fresh eyes and genitals.

Merlin's prophecy of Beket.

[*Fol. 9 b.]

Beket died at 48 [that is, 53–4], on Dec. 29, 1170. [T. MSS. L. T. Ha. Cl. n. *Op.* v. 262 n. 4.]

Macmurgh dies in May, 1171.

as he commencid holy church wyth his blod whan she was arerynge, Also this, whan she had long stond, and wox in elde, and redy was to fall, wyth his blode he put hyr in good state, and therin confermyd hyr. And as he toke hym-selfe to them that hym berewid the lyfe, forto arere the sekenys of holy church, Also this doutyd not to take hym-Selfe to s[h]arpe Swerdes, & wickyd men hondes, * For the fredome of Holy church to Saue Vn-Wemmede. The fourme of His Holy martirdome, two Versis of Lateyñ Sortely comprehendyth, that thus mych ben to vndyrstond: "For crystis Spouse, vndyr crystis tyme, in crystis churche, crystes owyn leman died." / Amonge al the holy Seyntes that almyghty god wroght for in erth of voundyrfull miracles, for to Show har holynes,—as the blynd to se, the lame to goñe, the dombe to Speke, the deue to hyre, leperes to clense, Paralyse to festnen, ydropesye and al othyr maner sekenes to hele, the dede to arrere, the vickid Spyrytys to ouercome, And al the iiij^{e}. elementes to har comaundement haddyn —he alon was y-wyrchippid with al thes. For a man, that his eghen was hym berewid, *and* his manly membris y-kute of and cast away, come to his tombe; and throw besechynge of hym, god hym sende newe // Of this holy martyr, Merlynge sayd thus in his prophesy: "A new martyr shall ryse, with new Miracles, that in the worldis endynge, in the weste of the world, by Special vertu, manes lymes out y-draw and out y-corue, a-yeyn shal make come. Sorrow shal make come Into Ioy, whan the Sonnes shal sle the Fadyr in his modyr wombe. Princes and hey men shal come out of the Este into the weste, *and* lout hame to the new martyr-is fotestappis." Al this was opynly Sayd of the holy martyr Seynte thomas. He was the whet-corne that fel in Erth, *and* mych frute forth broght. In the yere of his berth-tyme, xlviij.; of his Sacryfyynge, viij.; of his exil, vij^{e}.; in the Ende of Decembre, in the yere of oure lord-is Incarnacion, Mł. Clxxj; and was Pope of Rome, Alexandre the iij^{e}.; Empereure of almane, Fryderik; Kynge of Fraunce, Lowys // Whan the wyntyr was ypassyd, Dermot Macmurgh dyed in the begynnynge of May, *and* was buried at Fernys. A man grete of body; hardy in fyght amonge his Pepill; of lange *and* ofte cryinge in fyght, his voyce was Somdel hors; Leuer hym was

A.D. 1170–1.

[*Fol. 9 a.] *ut eiusdem formam conservaret illaesam.*

verus amator obit.

quod separatis membris et proiectis, inaudito more reposuit.

Nota de Sancto Thoma.

cum matris in utero patrem filii trucidabunt.

Descripcio Murcardi. (*Op.* v. 237–8.)

A.D. 1171. Mac-murgh's character.

was that man hym dredet than loued; þe noble & þe ryche he wold brynge to noght; the mek[1] & the pou*er* he wold rere; al men ayeyns hym, & he ayeyns al.

[CHAPTER XIX.]

Hasculf, with Norsemen in forty ships, led by John the Mad, lands & marches to attack Dublin. Miles of Cogan and the English meet him, rout the Norse, and drive them to their ships. John the Mad is slain. Hasculf threatens his conquerors,

Aftyr that, about whyt-sontyde, hastoyl, that was some tyme maystre of deuylyn,—as man that fayn was about for to awreke hys old tene,—come wyt men of northwey & of þe north ylondes, w*ith* ful grett folk, yn furty grett shyppes, & arryued yn þe hauen of amlyffy, w*ith* haꝛ lodes-manꝺ, that hete Iohn the Wood. Thay wenten out of haꝛ shyppes, men well I-wepned, su*m* w*ith* longe swerdes, some w*ith* Iren pletes & round sheldes well I-bound about w*ith* Iren, swerdes & speres & axys ynowe, & comenꝺ well ordeynly foꝛ to assaylle the tou*n* on the eest half. Miles de Cogan, kepeꝛ of þe Cyte, kyndly stalwardly, & hardy, wyth wel chosenꝺ folke, went out ayeyns ham, and yaf ham fyght; bot strongꝫ hyt was, to hold fyght ayayn so many w*ith* so fewe: thanꝺ had he I-lost some of hys menꝺ; & O knyghtes theyghꝫ was I-cut w*ith* þe kappe of hys haubergeonꝺ wytht a dynt of a dennysh ax. nede he most turne ynꝺ ayeyne at þe yate, tyll that Rychardꝰ de Cogan, Myles brotheꝛ, wythe few men, that whylle stylly went out at the south yate, & sharply becryed ham behynd, & smote vpon ham. throgh that, þat he come so fersly vpon ham, thay weꝛ so afrygh, that thay wyst nat onꝺ whych syde thay shold kepe the fyght: yn a lytell whyl thay waꝛ dyssconfyte, & toke ham to flyght toward haꝛ shyppes. these otheꝛ come ham betwene, & slowe ful many: theꝛ was Iohn the Wood I-slayn, & ful mych folk wyth hym, throght Walter de Redlesford, that ful stalwarth was yn the fyght. Hascoyl was I-take fro the shyppe theꝛ he was to I-flow, & I-broght alyues yn-to the Cyte, & hys lyf I-graunted for raunceonꝺ; bot as he stode yn court to-foꝛ Myles, he put forth lyddyrly a prout word & seyd, "wyt lytell poweꝛ we comen now, & thys nas bot assaye of our myght; bo[t] yf I lyue, aꝛ hyt be lange to, shal come otheꝛ so mych as þese." Whan thys was I-hardꝺ—for ynꝺ the mannys tonge hys oft lyf & deth, & me seyth eke, 'Tongꝫ breketh boꝺ, thegh hym-self ne hawe none'—Myles bad that

[1] MS. mok. Lat. 'humilium erector.'

tha[t] a man hym dreddyd than lowyd; the nobil and the ryche he wold brynge to noght; the meke and the Pouer he wold awaunce; al men ayeynes hym, and he ayeynes al men // A.D. 1171.

[CHAPTER XIX.]

Aftyr that, about whitsontyd, Hastoyl, that was Somtyme Maystyr of Deuelyn,—as man that fayne was about forto be awengid of his old wreth,—come wyth men of North-Wey and of the North ylondys, wyth many pepil, in fourty grete shippys, and londyd in the hauyn of Amlyffy, with har captayne that was callid Ihoñ the Woode[1]. Thay wentyn out of har shippis, men wel wepenyd, Some with longe Swerdys, Some with Iryñ Platys and roune sheldys, wel bound aboute with Iryñ, Swerdys and Speres and axes ynow, and comyn wel ordeynly forto assayle the toun on the Eeste halue. * Myles de cogan, Kepere of the Citey, Kynly Bolde and Hardy, Wyth Welle schosyn pepill, went out ayeynnes ham and yafe ham fyght; but stronge hit was to holde fyght ayeyn so many with so few; than had he lost Some of his men; and o knyghtes thegh was kut with the lappe of his haubergeoñ, with a stroke of a dennysh axe. nedes he moste turne aye at the yate, tyl that Richard de cogan, Miles-Is brodyr, with few men, that whyle went out at the south yate, and sharpely becryed ham behynde, and Smote vpon ham. throgh that, that he come so Fresly vpon ham, thay were so aferde, that thay wyst not on what Syde thay sholde kepe the fyght / In a lytyll whyle thay wer dyscomfyte, and toke ham to flyght toward har shippis. thes oþer come ham be-twen, and kyllid ful many. ther was Ihoñ de woode y-slayn, And ful mych pepil with hym, throw Water de Redelesford, that ful bolde was in that fyght. Hastoil was take fro the shipe ther he was to flede, and brogh[t] alyues into the Cite, and his lyfe gravntid for Raunceoun; but as he stode in courte to-for Miles, he sayd lewidly a prowte worde: "Wyth lytil pepil we come now, And this was not but assay of oure myght; but yf y lyue, ar hit be lange to, shal come othir so mych as thes." Whan this was herde,—For in the manes tonge is ofte lyfe and deth; And as hit is Sayd, Tonge brekyth bone, thegh hym-Selfe ne haue non,— Miles commandid that he shold anone out be-ladde, and to Smyte

Capitulum xix^m.

sexaginta navibus.

[1] *Insano vel Vehementi.*

alii laminis ferreis arte consutis.

[*Fol. 9 b.]

innatae animositatis audacia.

cum panno loricae praecisa.

ipsos a tergo acriter exclamando, percussit.

Johanne quoque Vehementi.

In manibus linguae, mors et vita. Prov. xviii. 21.

A.D. 1171. and is beheaded.

men shold hym anoon̄ out lede, & smyte of þe heed. & thus, for̄ hys hauteyn & prout spech, he lost þe lyf that thar̄-by-for̄ mekely hym was graunted.

[CHAPTER XX.]

[Fol.10a.] As Henry II's edict leaves Struguil bare of men and food,

Sone aftyr thys, many of thay that weren y-come yn-to Irland wyth the Erl, & eke to-fore,—for the kynges byddynge that come to ham, as hyt ys to[l]d a-foor̄,—leftēn the Erl, & wentēn yn-to england. The peple of yrland saw the erl narow beladde, both of hys mēn That hym left, & of vytalle that trukked, wher̄-of he hade grete plente ther̄-by-fore out of england. Thay gaddered ham to-gedders myche folk, al þe prynce of the lond, with al har̄ poer̄, & besegeden deuelyn̄ oñ euery halue; & that was throgh procuryng̃ of laurence, Erchebysshoppe of dyuelyn̄, as men seyd, for loue of hys folk. he sent also hys lettres, with Oconghours lettres, kynge of Connaght, to Gothred, kyng̃ of Manne, & to other̄ prynces of þe north ylondes, for̄ to be-sete the hauyn̄ of dyuelyn̄; & large yiftes & presentes ham yaue, & myche more hem behete, for to helpe ham. &, for thay drede ham of al such manere of aventures, Throgh that, that the englysshe-men hadden so wel I-conquered vpon̄ þe yrysshe, Thay comen̄ the rather ham to help; & yn lytell whyle came .xxxti. shyppys ful of stalwarth men wel arayed to fyght, & besetten̄ the haven̄ of amlyffy. Whan the Erl & hys men weren̄ well twey monthes beleyn̄ yn the syte of dyuelyn, & to ham come non helpe, nether̄ of þe lond ne on watyr̄, & vytaylle fast ham slaked; & (as hyt ys oft I-found, selde be-falleth oon̄ harme that more [ne come]) come Donald, Macmorghes sone, of okenseley, to The Erl, & told hym for that Robert steuenes-son was beseget yn hys castell that he had rered at þe carryke, of þe Cyteȝeyns of weysford & the men of kensely, well þre thousand men; & few men had wyth hym̄; [&, but hym] come socours by the þryd day, that of hym, ne thay that with hym weren̄, neuer no more to thynke. In the syte of dyuelyn, wer̄ that tyme be-left with the erl, Moryche fytz-Geraud & Reymond, that from̄ the kynge was comen̄ newly; sory for ham-self & for hars: & thegh þey weren yn grett angwysshe for̄ ham-seleue, thay waren̄ yn̄ wel more for̄ har̄ good brother̄ & for hys, that amonge

the Irish muster a big army, and besiege Dublin.

Gothred, King of Man, and others,

with thirty ships, beset Dublin Harbour.

After two months' siege, and when food is scarce,

news comes that Robert Stevenson is besieged in Carrick Fort.

Maurice and Reimund Fitz-Gerald are in Dublin.

of his hede. And this had he for his proude Spech loste the lyfe A.D. 1171.
that thar-by-for mekely hym was graundid.

[CHAPTER XX.]

Capitulum xx^m.

Sone aftyr this, many of them that weryn come into Irland with the Erle, and also tofor,—by the kynges comandement that come to ham as hit is to-for told,—leften the Erle, and wentyn into england. The pepil of Irland Saue the Erle narrow by-lad, both of his men that hym lefte, and of vytayle that trukked, wher-of he had grette plente ther-before out of Englond. Thay gaderid ham to-gederis mych pepill, al the princes of the londe with al har Power, and be-segedyn Deuelyn on euery syd. and that was by procvrynge of laurance, Archebishope of Deuelyn, as men sayd, for loue of his Pepil / Also he sende his lettres, with o-conghoure-is lettres, kynge of connaght, to Gothrede, kynge of Man, and to othyr Princes of the northe ylondes, for to be-Sette the hauyn of Deuelyn; and large yeftys and presentis ham yaue, and mych mor ham promysid, forto helpe ham. and, for thay dred ham of al Suche aventures, Throgh that, that the Englysh-men haddyn So wel conqueryd vpon the Irysh, Thay comyn the radyr ham to helpe. and in lytyll whyle came xxx^ti. shippis, ful of bold men wel arrayid to fyght, and be-setten the hauyn of amlyffy. whan the Erle and his men weryn wel two monthys besegid in the Cite of Deuelyn, and to ham come no Soccovr on lond ne on watyr, [* Fol. 10 a.]
* And Vytayle ham falid, (and as Hit ys oft founde, Selde befallyth one Harme that more ne comyth aftyr, and euer gaderyth to helpe more and more,) Come Donald, Macmurghes sone of Okensely, to the Erle, and tolde hym, for that Robert Steuenes-Sone was besegid in his castel that he had rerid at the Karrike, of the Citteseynes of weysford, and the men of Okenseley, wel iij^e. M^l. men; And few men had with hym; and, but hym come Socoure by the thyrd day, that of hym, ne thay that with hym weryn, neuer no more to thynke. In the Cite of Deuelyn, wer that tyme lefte with the Erle, Morice fiz Geraud, *and* Reymond, that from the kynge was come newely, Sory for ham-Selfe and for haris. and thegh they wer in grete angwysche for ham-Selfe, they weryn in wel more for har good brodyr, and for his, that amonge his enemys was besegyd, in

videntes Hibernici comitem et suos, tam suorum jactura, quam victualium defectu . . jam deficientes.

sed cumulante semper incommoda fortuna sinistra.

quasi tribus virorum milibus

tam suorum quam sui non mediocriter anxietate turbati.

A.D. 1171. Maurice Fitz-Gerald harangs his men:

hys fomen was beseyget, yn place febly I-garnset, but a dych & a hegge of thornes vpon, & lytell ost ston-wal. Moryce arose vp to-fore the erl & the knyghtes, & seyde: "Nat to delytes, ne ydelnes set to drawen, come we nat yn-to thys lande; both[1] for to sechen aduentures, & prouen our streynth vpon peryl of our heedes. We haue I-stond awhyle & heghest, & now we bene y-turned to the lowest, for so goth þe sykenesse of thys world; euery gladnesse ys endet wyth sorowe, & euery selth hath wnselth at þe end. After þe bryght day, cometh the durke[2] nyght; & after, the durknesse of * þe nyght ys awey I-dryuen with þe lyght of þe sone. Ar thys, the ouer-hand was yn all styddes our, & plente of alle good; nowe beth so beloken, that non help vs ne may come, noþer by lond ne by watyr. On oþer halue, Robert steuenes-sone, whos herdy herth opened vs þe wey yn-to þys land, ys beseged fer wyt hys fomen yn folk place. What ybyde we? haue we any hope that our lond-folk vs come to helpe? thar-to ne tryst we nat; for we beth now yn such law I-sette, þat as þe Iresshe wer, ar thys, to the englyshe, also þe englysshe beth now to þe Iresshe. thar-for gow owt stalwartly, assayllen our fomen! thegh we few be, we ben men of herth, & wel I-wepned! ne shal neuer naked rascayll, thegh þey many be, haue myght ne power vs to wyt-stond." Whan moryce hadde thys I-seyd, Reymond, þat was I-smyte wyth the same sorow of herth, seyd to ham þe same wordes, & mych mor, 'that thay wollden allerformest smyth vpon þe kyng of konnaght, & hym that was heed, & formest & heghest of ham alle.' Al that ther weren, helden herto, & ren astryf to wepne ham, & leppen to hors, & deled ham a thre, thegh thay fewe weren. In þe formest, was Reymond with twonty knyghtes; In þe other, myles wyth .xxx^ti.; In þe pryd, the Erl & morice, with fourty knyghtes & Squyerys; & men an-hors & a-foot, to euery of these I-sete, as hyt wold by-falle: thay went ham out of þe syte stylly, about noon-dayes, & with so few men assayllyden an hostes of .xxx^ti. thousand. Reymond, amonge the fyrst, smote vpon ham; & feyr to-for al other: he smote tweyne throgh-out wyth a speer. Reymond & Moryce twey sonnes, Geraud & Alexander,

"We were the highest: we are now the lowest.

[*Fol. 10 b.]

"No help can come to us.

"Let us fight! Tho' few, we've heart, and can beat our naked foes."

The English sally out, in three small divisions against 30,000 Irish.

Reimund Fitz-Gerald fights best.

[1] but.

[2] MS. druke.

place febilly garnesyd, but a dyche and a hegge of thornys vpon, and a lytil stone wal. Moryce aros vp to-for the Erle and the knyghtes, and sayd: "Not to delytes, ne ydylnes, come we nat into this land; but forto sechyn adventures, and proven oure Streynth vpon peril of oure hedys. we haue stond awhyle, and hygh; and now we ben turnyd to the louyst; for So is the schavnge of this world. the end of euery gladnes is Sorrow. And euery Surnesse hath vnsurnes at the ende. Aftyr the bryght day, comyth the nyght; and aftyr, the durkenes of the nyght is a-way dryven with the lyght of the Sone. Afor this, the ouerhand was in al places our, and plente of al goode. Now ben we So belokken, that none helpe vs ne may come, nothyr by lond ne by watyr. On the othyr Syde, Robert Steuenes-Sone, whos bolde hert openyd vs the way into this lond, is besegid fer with his fomen in febyll place. Whate abyde we? haue we any hoppe that oure lond-pepil wil vs come to helpe? tharto ne trust we not / for we byth now in Such lawe y-Sette, that[1] as the Iryssh wer, or this, to the Englysh, Also the Englysh byth now to the Iryssh. Wherfor go we out boldely assaylyn oure enemys! thegh we fewe be, we ben men of herte and wel wepenyd! ne shall neuer nakyd raskayl, thegh they many be, haue myght ne powere vs to wythstond." Whan Morice had this sayd, Reymonde, that was Smyte wyth the Same Sorrow of herte, sayde to ham the same wordis, and mych mor, 'that thay woldyn alther-formyst Smyte vpon the kynge of connaght / and he that was hede *and* formyst of ham al.' Al that ther weryn, heldyn herto, and went to wepyn ham, and leppyn to hors, and delyd ham on thre, thegh thay few were. In the formyst, was Reymond, with twonty knyghtes; In the othyr, Milis, with xxx^ti. In the thyrd, the Erle and Morice wy[th] fowrty knyghtes, *and* Morice with fourty knyghtis *and* Squyeris; *and* men an-hors an[d] a-fote, to euery of thys y-sette, as hit wolde befall. thay went ham out of the Cite Softely, about noon dayes, and wyth So few men assayledyn an hoste * of xxx^ti M^l. Reymonde, amonge the fyght, fryst Smote vpon ham, and ferre to-for al othyr. he Smote two throgh-out with a Spere. Reymond and Morices two Sonnes, Geraud and alex-

A.D. 1171.

Non ad delicias, viri, non ad otia vocati.

Auxilium nobis, nec mare mittit, nec classis inimica permittit.

ut sicut Hibernicis Angli, sic et Anglis Hibernici simus.

hora quasi post nonam.

[* Fol. 10 b.]

[1] In the margin, 'as we byth ynglys on to the yryssh, so we byth yryssh on to the ynglys.'

A.D. 1171. The little English host rout the 30,000 Irish, and return to Dublin with great spoil. They march (too late) to aid Fitz-Stephen.

thegh thay weꝛ fyrst y-sete yn þe latest of þe host, throgh kynd stalwardnesse hertly smytteñ out to the formest, & many dydden to deth. Alle þe otheꝛ fresshely foloweden afteꝛ; & yn lytell whylle dysconfited al þe hoste, & sloweñ so many, that no tonge ne myght tell. Oconnoghouꝛ, þat that tym satte yn bathe, vnnethe escaped: thay folwed the dyscomfytuꝛ oñ euery halue tyll þe nyght ham leth. Than thay turned ayeyne, & name haꝛ pelfre, gold & syluyꝛ, clothes & wepne & hors, & wenteñ wyth mychel gladnesse yn-to þe syte. Amorow þay lefte good kypynge yn the syte, & turneden toward weysford by Odroon, wyth banerꝛ y-lacet, foꝛ to socouꝛ Robert steuenes-sone.

[CHAPTER XXI.]

[Fol. 11a.] Fitz-Stephen's scanty garrison defend themselves bravely.

The mene time, the folke of Weysford, wythe þe poweꝛ of Okensely, wel thre þousand men, ayeyn haꝛ othes I-sweꝛ & haꝛ trowth, Robert steuenessoñ al vnwardly, with fyue knyghtes & a few bow-men I-found withyn hys feble castel, thay stynt nat to assaylle. thay defendet ham full stalwarthly, thegh they fewe weꝛ; & namely a knyght that hete Wyllyam Not, aftyꝛ Robert, ouer al otheꝛ best dydde. Whan thay myght nat wyth streynth spede, thay bethoght ham that wyth falshed & wyth treyson they wold come wyth-yn ham. Thay sent to þe dyche twey bysshoppes, that on of Weysford, that otheꝛ of kyldaꝛ, & otheꝛ mo wyth ham yn habyt of relygyoñ; thay broght with ham massebokes, & Corpus domini, & relykes many, & sworne vp-on ham al, & vpoñ haꝛ owne soules, that 'dyuelyn was Itak; & þe Erl & morice & Remond, & the englisshe-men, euerychon I-slawe; the host of leynestre & of Connaght comyng to ham-ward; & for good of hym, thay weꝛ to hym y-come; that he shold yeld vp his castel, & me shold saue hym lyf & lym, & al his & al haꝛ good; for he was ham so fre & so meke lord, me shold trewly brynge hym & his ouer in-to Wales ar the grete hoste of his fomen to hym comen, that nothyng nold spaꝛ hym.' Robert leued haꝛ speche & haꝛ fals othes; he came out & yeldet hym & his, to ham & to haꝛ trowth. Thay weꝛ no raþer out I-comen, that me ne name ham euerychone; & some thay slowen yn þe place; some þay vndide & betten lidderly & bonden; & wyth ham selfe I-bounden, kesten

The Irish deceive them; swear Dublin is taken, and its Chiefs slain. They offer the garrison a safe transport to Wales. Their false words are believd, and the garrison are slain or imprisond.

andyr, thegh they were fryst Sette in the laste of the hoste, throgh kynly bolul[1] hertely Smyten out to the formyst, *and* many dyddyn to deth. Al the othyr freschely folwedyn aftyr; And in lytyll Space of tyme dyscomfyted al the hoste, and slowyn so many, that no tonge myght tell. Oconghoure, that that tyme Satte in bathe, vnneth Escapid. thay folwid the dyscomfiture on euery halue tyll the nyght ham lette. Than thay turned ayeyñe, and toke har pilfre, gold and Syluyr, clothis, and wepyn and hors, *and* wentyn *with* myche gladnes into the Cite. A-morrow thay lefte good kepynge in the cite, and turned toward Weysford by Odrooñ, wyth banerés ylacyd, forto Socoure Robert Steuenes-Sonne.

A.D. 1171.

innatae tamen strenuitatis indicio . . [1 ? *for* 'bolnys,' 59/14.] *victualibus et vecturis, spoliis quoque et armis onerati.*

[CHAPTER XXI.]

The men-tyme, the pepil of weysford, *with* the Power of okenseley, wel iij^e. M^l. men, ayeyn har othis Sworne and har trouth, Robert Steuenes-Sonne al vn-wittynge, *with* v. knyghtes and a few bowmen, fownde *with*in his febil castel, thay stynte not to assayle. thay defendyd ham ful boldely, thegh they fewe were; and Specialy a knyght that was callid William Not, aftyr Robert, ouer al othyr best dyd. Whan thay myght not *with* streynth Spede, thay bethoght ham that *with* falshede and *with* treysone thay wolde come *with*in ham. Thay Sende to the dyche two bysshopis, that one of weysford, that othyr of kyldare, and othyr mo *with* ham in habit of religioñ. thay broght *with* ham masbokes *and* Corpus d*omi*ni, *and* relykis many, and Sworñ vp-on ham al, and vpon har owyn Soulys, that 'Deuelyn was take; and the Erle, and Morice *and* Reymond, and the Englysh-men, euerychoñe were Slayn; and the hoste of leynystre and of connaght comynge to hamward; and for good of hym, thay were to hym come; that he sholde yelde vp his castel, and thay wold Sawe his lyfe, and al his, and al har good; for he was to ham so fre and So meke lorde, they wold trewely brynge hym and his ouer into walis, or the grete oste of his enemys to hym were come, that nothynge wolde hym Spare.' Robert belewid har Spech and har fals othys. He came out, and yeldyd hym *and* his, to ham and to har trouth. Thay were no radyr out-come, than thay toke ham euerychone; and Some thay Slowyn in the Place; Some thay vndide and bettyn vickydly[2]; *and*

Capitulum xxj^m.

Stephanidem improvisum.

ad consueta fallaciae tela figmentaque dolosa concurrunt.

Stephanidae ipsius commodi causa.

[2] *alii veraberibus, alii vero vulneribus graviter afflicti.*

A.D. 1171. The Irish traitors burn Wexford, and go to the Island of Begeri, with Fitz-Stephen. In the pass of Odroon, Striguil defeats a Leinster force.

willych In preson. Nat long ther-after, come soth tythyngges of the dysconfytur of dyuelyn, & the Erles comyng toward ham. the thraytours, whan thay hyt wysteñ, thay setten har own toun of weysford afyr, & barnen hyte; & wenteñ ham-self, with wyf & chyld, & al har oþer good & har presons, ynto þe Iland of beggeryng, þat hys I-sete yn the entre of the hauen of Weysford. þe host of leynester come ayeyns hym yn Odrone, & yaf hym fyght yn a paas of o thykke wood, strange yn hym selue, & comerous. Ther wer many of the Irysshe y-slaw yn that fyght; & þe Erl & al hys cameñ hole & sound yn-to þe pleyne, sawe o man that he þer forlese; & meyler, our al other, as hys wone was, stalwardly hym thar byladde.

The Wexford men threaten to kill Fitz-Stephen &c. The English hear of the loss of the Carrick garrison, and weep for it.

¶ After that, as thay comyñ toward Weysford, comeñ meñ ayeyns ham, & tolden ham the aduentur of Robert, & of the tounes bernyng, & seydeñ ham sykerly, that 'yf þay to ham wold vend anoon, þay wold sle har presons, & send ham the heeddes.' Whañ thus was y-hard among the oste, who-so had I-hard þe wepynge, & the wenynge, & the sorow that thay mad, he myght wel sygge that 'neuer-more sych reuth was amonge meñ I-sey.' he was mañ that noon other was hys eunynge In all goodnesse[1], & ensampell to all knyghtes that any stalwarthnesse wold begynnyge; * ffor yn Wales & eke yn Irland many aduentures both god & yuel had I-fond, that ofter weren hys aduentures hard, thegh thay som tyme welcomeñ wyth hym. He was man mych of body, [2]fayr vysage, soft & rody, nat ful becumliche; grete meet-yeuer, large & fre throgh al thynge, & of grett solace yn Iappynge & pleynge; bot to mych, & vnmesurable, he yaf hymself lecherye[2]. The Erl was man of suche manere; [3]he was samroed, with grey eghen, wommanes vysage, & sproty, smal spech, short nek[3]; on al other manere he was of fayr body, & alonge fre & meke; ham that he hade nat to yeue to, he quemed ham with fayr spech: out of wepne, he was as redy to otheres byddynge

[* Fol. 11 b.]

Robert Fitz-Stephen described.

Richard, Earl of Striguil described.

[1] O virum, virtutis unicum, verique laboris exemplum.—*Op.* v. 271.

[2–2] vultuque decenti; et statura paulo mediocritatem excedente: vir dapsilis et largus, liberalis et jocundus, sed vino Venerique trans modestiam datus.—*Op.* v. 271–2.

[3–3] Vir subrufus, lentiginosus, oculis glaucis, facie feminea, voce exili, colls contracto.—Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 272. Rolls Series.

boundy[n]; *and with* hym-Selfe y-bound, kesten vnmercyably in pryson[1]. Not lange ther-aftyr, come trew thythynges of the dyscomfyture of Deuelyn, and the Erlis comynge toward ham. the traytoures, whan thay hit Vndyrstode, thay Setten har owyn toune of weysford afyre, and brentyn hit / And wenten hame-Selfe, with wyfe and chylde, and al hare othyr good and har prisoneres, into the Iland of begeryn, that is at the Entrest of the hawyn of weysford: the Hoste of Leynystre come ayeynys hame in odroon, and yafe ham fyght in a paace of thyke wodde, strange in hym-* Selfe, and comeros[2]. Ther wer many of the Iryssh Slayn in that fyght; ande the Erle and al his came hole and Sounde into the Playn, Saue o man that he there forlese. And Meylere, ouer al othyr, as he was woned, boldely hym there bore / Aftyr that, as thay comen toward weysford, came men toward hame, and toldyn ham the aduenture of Robert and of the tounes brennynge, and † Sayd ham Surly, that 'yf thay wolde to ham wende anoone, thay wolde sle har prisoneres, and Send ham the hedys.' Whan this was herde amonge þe hoste, who-so hadd herd the wepynge, and the lementacion and the Sorrow that thay made, he myght wel say that 'Such Sorrow was neuer amonge men Sey' // He was man, that none othyr was his eunynge in al goodnesse, and Ensampil of al knyghtys that any boldnys wolde begynne. for in Walis, and also in Irland, many aduentures both good and euyl had fovnde, that ofter weryn his aduentures hard, thegh thay Sometyme wel comyn with hym. he was man myche of body, fayr vysage, Softe and rody, not ful becomlych; good mette-yeuer, large and fre throgh al thynge, and of grete Solace in Iaypynge; but to mych, and vnmesurably, he yafe hym-Selfe to Lechery //

A.D. 1171.

ad insulam Begeri . . . quae et sancta vocatur.

[* Fol. 11 a.]

† *ex parte quoque proditorum firmiter asserentes, quod si ad illos accedere forte praesumant, praecisa sibi suorum capita statim cuncta remittent.*

Descripcio Roberti fiz Steuen.

A big man, liberal, but lecherous.

The Erle was man of Such manere: he was wyth-out doute of grey eighen, womanes visage, *and* Sproty, smale Speche, Short neke: on al othyr maner, he was a fayre body, and alonge fre and meke. thay that he hadd not to yew, he plesyd with fayre Spech[3]. Out of wepyn, he was as redy to otheres byddynge, as thay to hym.

Descripcio Ricardi Comitis.

[1] in carceres, et vincula contruduntur.—*Op.* v. 271.

[2] quamquam in sui natura arcto nimis et invio, concidibus tamen plurimum arte munito.—*Op.* v. 272.

[3] Quod re non poterat, verborum suavitate componebat.—*Ibid.*

A.D. 1171. Description of Richard, Earl of Striguil.

as othe͞r to hys: alle thynge he dydde by rede of hys me͞n, & nothynge wyth-out. Out of bataylle, he had more of knyght tha͞n of host-lede͞r; yn bataylle, more lede͞r than knyght; & yn al aduenturs of bataylle, he was stydfast, ful connynge, & tokne of recet to al hys host; & for no͞n vnhap he ne amayed hymself, ne yn wanhope ne fel; ne for ne good chaunce, he ne made hym the prutter ne þe more hautay͞n; bot euer-more, yn al aduen[tu]rs, of stydfast herth & trewe.

[CHAPTER XXII.]

The Earl of Striguil

Whan the erl hadde I-hard the trayson þat was I-done to Robert, wytht myche sorow of hert he went hym with the host to Watyrford; & þer he fond heruy of mountmorthy, that tha͞n wase newe͞n I-come͞n out of englond fro͞m þe kynge, & broght wryttes, & eke by mych amonested the erl that he shold wend to the kynge. he hade shyppe redy, & good wynd; he name heruy with hym, & went ouer; come to the contre of clandechestre, to Newenham, ther he fond the kynge with mychel host, redy to pass yn-to Irland. & after mychę speche betwene ham ymade, & myche dalyaunce, throgh heruyes modelyng & comynge about þe erle, & eke hys besechynge, the kynge name of hym manred fo͞r to hold leynestre of hym; & the Erl graunted þe kynge, dyuely͞n, & all the hauen tounes vpo͞n þe see, with ha͞r Candredes & castelles þer-vpo͞n y-set; & that othe͞r parte of hys conquestre, he & hys heyres sholde͞n holde͞n of þe kynge & hys heyrs. Whan thys was al on thys manere I-done, the kynge toke the wey yn-to south Wales, & cam to pembroke; & the͞r yn þe contre abode with hys host longe whyle, a͞r he had wynd fo͞r to passe. The whyle that he was tha͞r, he hadde houndes & haukes, as man that mych delyted yn suche game. .O. day he went by the strond of þe see, & ba͞r a mych goshawke of northwey vpo͞n hys hand. Than sat vp-o͞n an hegh clyff ouer the strond, a fauco͞n gentel, negh hys nest, the͞r he was woned to brede. The *goshake sawe the faco͞n, & a-bated to hym. the kynge that saw; & kest hym of hys hand; & he nam hys flyght toward the faco͞n, hym fore to henten: the faco͞n sawe hym comynge, & nam hys flyght an heghe, & escaped of hym; þe goshawke turned ayeyne to þe kynges hand; & a͞r

sails to England, and finds Henry II at Newnham, Glostershire, ready to cross to Ireland.

The Earl yields Dublin and all haven-towns to Henry,

who goes to Pembroke, and waits there for a favourable wind.

[* Fol. 12 a.]

Henry's Norse goshawk

Al thynge he did by consayle of his men, and nothynge without / A.D. 1171.
Out of battayl, he had more of knyght than of hoste-leder; in
battayle / more ledder than knyght / and in al aduentures of *In praelio positus, firum suis recuperationis et refugii signum manebat.*
battayle, he was stydfaste, ful conynge, and tokyn of recette to al his
hoste; and for no vnhape he was not aferde hym-Selfe, ne in vanhope ne felle; ne for no good chaunce, he was not the Pruttyr, ne the heyer; but euer-more, in al aduentures, of stydfaste herte and trewe.

[CHAPTER XXII.]

WHan the Erle had herde the trayson that was done to Robert, with myche Sorrow of herte he went with al the hoste to watyrford; and ther he founde heruey of montmurthy, that that tyme was come out of England frome the kynge, and broght writtes, and Eke mych amonneschyd the Erle that he sholde wend to the kynge. he had ship redy, and good wynd; he toke heruey with hym, *and* went ouer; come to the contrey of clandecestre, to New-Enham, ther he found the Kynge with grette hoste, redy to Passe Into Irland. and aftyr mych Speche betwen ham made, and myche delyaunce, throgh herueyes medlynge and comynge about the Erle, and also his besechynge, the kynge toke of hym concayle forto holde leynystre of hym; and the Erle graunted the kynge, deuelyn, and al the hawyn tounes vpon the see, with hare candredes and castelis there-vpon sette; and that othyr Parte of his conqueste, * He and Hys heyres sholde Holde of the Kynge and [his] Heyrys. Whan this Was on this manere done, the kynge toke the way into South walis, and came to Pembroke[1]; and ther in the contrey abode with his hoste longe tyme, ar thay had wynd to Passe. The whyle that he was there, he hadd houndes and haukys, as man that mych delytyth in Such game. O day, he went by þe see stronde, and bar a mych goshauké of Norwey on his hande. Than Sate vpon an hey clyfe ouer the stronde, a faucon gentyll, ney his neste, ther he was wonyd to brede. the goshauke Saw the faucon, and abated to hym hym forto smyte. the faucon saw hym comynge, and toke his flyght an hey, and Escapid of hym. the goshauke turnyd ayeyn to the

Capitulum xxijm.

circumventu pariter et interventu

[* Fol. 11 b.]

laeva projecit

[1] Et Penbrochiam veniens, pulcherrimam in brevi Milverdico portu [Milford Haven] classem conjunxit.—Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 273.

A.D. 1171. is kild by a Welsh falcon.

he myght fully take to hym, the facoñ smote to hym from an heyght, & forcleue hym the rygge, & kest hym adoune dede at the kynges foote. Al thay that hyt saw, hadden ther-of myche wondyr. Than bade the kynge, that fro that tyme, the bryddes of that facons neste shold euer-mor be I-kepte to hys owne be-houe; & so thay wer, euery yeyr; & yn al hys kynge-dome wer noñ so good facons I-found, ne so bold.

[CHAPTER XXIII.]

O'Rourke, king of Meath,

The while that thys was, Roueryke, the kynge of Myth,— awayted that the erl was out of lond; & Reymond & lytel folk was beleft ar dyuelyn, the syte & þe contrey for to kepe,—

assaults Dublin, early in September, but is beaten off by Miles of Cogan; and his son is slain.

with mych folkę come to dyuelyñ about myd-heruest, & assaylled the walles of þe syte with gret streynth & loly crye, & wend wel to haue I-take þe syte, & al þat þer-In was. bote ther streynthys & stalwarthnesse, hyt mote nedes shewe hymself: Myles de Cogañ & hys meñ preuely wenten out, & smote grymly vpon ham, so þat yn lytell whyl thay weren al dyscomfyted. Bot roury hymself vnnethe escaped; & hys sone, a welle stalwarth man amonge hys folk, was thar I-slawe, wyth many ęther.

[CHAPTER XXIV.]

Nota: de[1] primo aduentu Regis Angliae in hiberniam

Henry II lands at Waterford on Oct. 18, 1171, fulfilling prophecies of Merlin and St. Moling.

Aftir this, whan the kynge had I-dyght al that nede was to so noble comynge ynto Irlond, he went to seynth dauyes; & besoght the holy mañ, seynt dauy, with grett deuocion & mych wurshyppe. And tho weder hym come, & wynd at wylle. He put hym to saylle; passed the see, hool & sound; & arryued at Waterford on seynt lukes day, with fywe houndred knyghtes, & men, an hors an a foot, fulle many. Than was fulfylled a prophycye that Merlyn seyd: "out of þe Este shal come a fyr bernynge, & shal Irlond al about for-swely." And seynt Molynge seyd þus: "Out of þe eeste shal come a stronge thondred, & shal smyte yn-to þe weste, & al the streynth of Ormond adoun brynge." He arryued, the yer of hys kyngedome, senthe; of hys elde .xl.;

[1] Later note in right margin: 'For in Martilogis the king brought 400 great shippes into Irelande, and in short time subdued the whole lande, beinge governed by 5 kinges, all which submitted to the king, except the king of Connaght, who kept himself in woods and marishes.'

kyngys hand'; and, Ar he myght fully take to hym, the faucon smote to hym from an hey, and for-clew hym the bake, and kest hym doune ded at the kynges fote. Al thay that hit Saw, ther-of had grete wondyr.• [1] Than comandid' the kynge, that fro that tyme, birdis of that faucon-is neste shold euer-more be kepe to his owyn behow; and So thay were, euery yere. And in al his kyngdome wer none So good faucones y-found, ne so bolde.

A.D. 1171.

[1] *singulis rex annis, circa nidificationis tempora, propter falcones terrae illius, qui marinis in rupibus excluduntur, mittere consuerit.*

[CHAPTER XXIII.]

Capitulum xxiij^m^.

THe mene-tyme that this was / Roueryke, the kynge of mythe[1],—be-helde his tyme, and that the Erle out of lond was, *and* Reymond' *and* lytil peple was lefte at Deuelyn, the Cite and the contrey to kepe,—wyth mych pepyl come to deuelyn about myd hervyst, and assaylid the wallis of the Cite *with* gret Streynth and grymly cry, *and* wend wel to haue take the Cite, and al that therin was. But ther streynthis *and* bolnys, hit mote nede Schow hym-Selfe: Miles de Cogan and his men *pr*iuely wentyn out, and smote grymly vpon ham, so that in lytyll whyle thay weryn al dys-comfyted'. But Roury hym-Selfe vnneth Escapyd'; and his Son*ne*, a wel bolde man amonge his pepil, was ther Slayn, *with* many o*per*.

Sed quoniam virtus claudi nescit; et ignis oppressus, in flammam erumpit.

[CHAPTER XXIV.]

Capitulum xxiiij^m^.

Aftyr this, whan the kynge had dygh al that nede was to So nobyl comynge into Irland', he went to Seynt Dauyes, and besoght the holy man, seynt Dauy, *with* gret deuocion *and* myche wyrchippe. and then wynde and weddyr hym come at wille. he putte hym to sayle, and passyd the see, holde and Sounde; and londyd at Watyrford' on Seynte Luke-is day, *with* fyue hundred knyghtes, and men an hors and a foote, ful many. Than was fulfillid a prophesy that Merlyn Sayd thus / "Out of the Este shal come a fyre brennynge, and shal Irland al aboute forswely." And seynt Molynge sayd thus, "Out of the Este shal come a stronge thondyr, and shal smyte into the weste, and al the streynth of Ormond adoune brynge." he londyt, the yere of the kynge-dome, the Senfte; of his age, the xl; of our lordys incarnacion, M^l^. Clxxij; *and* was

Nota de primo aduentu Regis Anglie in hiberniam.

Veniet ab aurora turbo validus.

[1] rex monoculus Medensis Ororicius . . . cum multitudine magna, circa kalendas Septembris, Dubliniam venit.—*Op.* v. 274.

A.D. 1171. of our lordes Incarnacion .M.C.lxxij ; & was poppe, Alexander the thryd; Emperour, ffryderyke ; kynge of ffraunce, lowyse.

[CHAPTER XXV.]

Henry II has Fitz-Stephen

The kynge abode at Waterford a fewe dayes. Theder come the sytzeyns of weysford, & broght to hym Robert steuenesse-sone, as for gret seruyce, & yn hope of good reward; ffor as myche as he come yn-to Irlond, lond to conquer, wythout auctoryte of hegher prynce, & yaue other, ensample for to comen ynto the lond. The kynge, at the byggynnyge, told of hym grete

[* Fol. 12 b.]

* vnworthynesse; & edwyte hym, *with* grete thretynge, of that grete boldnesse ; & lete take hym, y-bound as he was, & gyued hym to

put in prison.

another, & put hym yn Rathnyldestour for to kepen. Soine

The King of Cork does homage to Henry II;

þer-after come the kynge of Corke, Dermot Maccarthy, & yeld hym to the kynge, & dydde hym homage, & swar hym hold othes, & delyuered hym ostages for to be to hym hold & trȩw, & ber hym truage euery yer of hys land. ffrom thus, the kynge went wythe the hoste to lysmore, & ther was twey dayes; & fro thus, went to Casshle. Theder came donald Obreen, kynge of

so do the King of Limerick,

lymeryke, to hym vpon the watyr of ssur; & for to hawe pees, yeld hym to þe kynge yn al manere as Maccathy hadde done. The kynge set kepers both at Corke & at lymeryke; & to hym comen the hoste of both contrees aftyr Maccathy & Obreen, & yeld

and all the best folk of Munster.

ham to þe kynge, & becomen hys meyn by othes & ostages; so that ther was none that war of any name yn al Monestre, that by hys good wylle ne yeld hym to the kynge. Whan thys was al I-done, the kynge, *with* mych wyrsshyppe & wyth ryche yiftes, lete euery

Henry II returns to Waterford,

man wend yn-to hys owne lond, & went hym-self by Tybrach ayeyne to Waterford. þer was ayeyne Robert y-broght to-for hym. The kynge saw hym, & bethoght hym of þe gret goodnesse þat was yn hym, & of hys stalwarthnesse & hys hardy hert; of many good seruices that he & hys hadden I-done, wyth mych trauaylle & grette perille of lyue : he had grett reuth of hym yn hys hert;

pardons Fitz-Stephen, and restores him his lands.

&, throgh besechynge of hegh men, al hys wreth, wyth good hert he hym foryaf, & delyueret hym out of pryson, & lete delyuer hym hys londes þat hym weren be-nomen, of Weysford & of þe

pope, Alexandyr the thyrd; Emperoure, Frederike; kynge of Fraunce, Lowys. A.D. 1171.

[CHAPTER XXV.]

THe Kyng abod at Watyrforde a few Dayes. Thedyr come the Cytteseynys of Weysford, and broght to hym Robert Steuenes-Sonne, as for grete Seruyse, and in hope of good reward, for-as-mych as he came into Irland, lond to conquere, wythout auctorite of heghyr Prince, and yaue othyr ensampil forto come into londe. The kynge, at the begynnynge, tolde of hym gret Vnuorthynys; and reprewid hym, *with* grete tretynge, of that grete boldnes; and lette take hym, bound as he was, *and* gywid hym to anothyr, *and* Put hym in Rathnyldys toure forto kepyn. Sone ther-aftyr come the kynge of Corke, Dermot Maccharthy, and yelde hym to the kynge, and dyd hym homage, and Sware hym olde othis, and delyuerid hym hostagis forto be to hym holde *and* trew, and ber hym truage euery yere of his land. From thens the kynge went *with* the hoste to Lysmor, and ther was two dayes; and fro thens went to Cassell. Thedyr came Donal Obreyne, kynge of Lymerik, and to hym on the watyr of Sure; *and* for-to haue pees, yelde hym to the kynge in al maner as Macchardy hadd done. The kynge Sette keperes both at Corke and at Lymerike; and to hym come the Best of both contreis aftyr maccharthy *and* Obreñ, *and* yelde ham to the kynge, and be-comyn his men by othis and hostagys, so that ther nas none that was holde of any reputacion in al Monester, that by his good wyll ne yelde hym to the kynge. Whan this was al done, the kynge, *with* mych vyrchip and wyth ryche yeftys, lette euery man wend into his owyn lond, And wente hym-Selfe by Tybraght ayeyne to watyrford. ther was ayeyn Robert broght to-for hym. The kynge Saw hym, and bethoght hym of the grete goodnesse that was in hym, and of his boldnys and his hardy herte, of many good seruyces that he and his haddyn done with mych trauayl and grete Perel of lyfe. He had of hym grete Pite in his herte; *and*, throw besechynge of good men, al his wreth *with* good herte he hym for-yaue, and delyuerid hym out of prisone, *and* delyuerid hym his londys that of hym wer take fro, of Weysford

[Fol. 12 a.]

Capitulum xxv^m.

quasi sub praetextu obsequii, eo quod Hiberniam citra ipsius assensum primus intraverit, aliisque malignandi occasionem praestiterit, vinctum et captivum adducunt.

rex videns virum tantis fortunae periculis, et toties, exositum.

A.D. 1171. contrey about. Some syggeñ that the kynge lete to-draw the traytours that hym betrayed; Bot Maystre Geroud ne telleth nothynge þer-of; & þer-fore I ne tel hyt nat to sothe, bot hyt oght well be so.

Master Gerald says nothing of traitors being drawn and quarterd.

[CHAPTER XXVI.]

Whan þe kynge had thus I-do, he left at Waterford, Robert beranardessoñ, wyth mych meyne; &, by Ossery, name the wey toward dyuelyñ. In that wyage, the kynge of Ossery came to hym, & yeld hym to the kynge; & whan he hade I-bydde awhylle at dyuelyñ, theder come Al þe heghest Iresshe-meñ of leynestre, & besoghten pees, & yoldeñ ham to the kyng. Roryke O'conghour, the kynge of Connaght, ayeyns the kynges messagers at the watyr shynnen,—that ys to wytteñ, hugh þe lacy & wyllyam Al-delines sone,—ther he yeld hym to þe kynge; & the kynge of Myth Also; So that ther nas none heght mañ yn Irland, that ne come to the kynges owne body, or sent messagers for to be-comeñ hys man, & yeld hym to hym, sawe only tlray of vlnestre. Than was fulfylled a prophecye that seynth Molynge seyd: "To-for hym shall foot-*falle þe prynces, & trogh[1] boxom-fastines[2] the lyme of pees shul vnderfonge." Merlyn seyd an-other: "Tho is lyght, the foules of the Iland shollen togedder fle; & the most of ham, with har wenges I-brant, shollen ouerthrowen yn thraldome; the fyf deles shollen be broght yn-to on, & the syxt shal ouercome the strengest places of Irland." Whan the mydwyntter came, many of the heghest comen to þe kynges court to feste; & myche wonder ham thoght of the noble seruice that þey þer saw, & of the myche plente of mete & of drynke, of bordes I-sette, & fayr clothes vpon; the hegh seruice of panetrye & buttellerie, & ryche vessels of gold & sylver; the many manere metes of kechen, on the manere of Englond, whych thay had neuer þer-to-fore I-sey. After that þe fest was heghly & fayr I-hold, euery man went wyth gladnesse yn-to hys owne. In that tyme, weren bowemeñ at ffynglas I-horberowed, & wenten ynto chyrche haye, & hewen adoun trees, that seyntes by old tyme hadden þer I-sete: þer came sodeyñ deth vpon ham, euerychoñ. [See Giraldus's *Topogr. Hibern.* Opera, v. 135.]

Prophecies of St. Moling and Merlin. [*Fol. 13 a.]

The Kings of Connaught and Meath yield to Henry II's messengers.

The Irish nobles wonder at the fine meals and decorations at Henry II's feast.

Sacrilegious bowmen die suddenly.

[1] A later overline *h* is above the *tr* of 'trogh.'

[2] or 'fastmes.'

and of the contrey aboute. Some sayne that the kynge lette to- A.D. 1171.
draw the traytoures that hym betrayed. But Maystyr Geraud ne tellyth nothynge ther-of; and therfor y ne tell hit not for throuth, but hit ought wel be so.

[CHAPTER XXVI.]

Whan the kynge had thus done, he lefte at watyrford, Robert Barnardessonne, with mych pepill; and, by Ossory, toke his way to Deuelyn. In that vyage, the kynge of Ossory came to hym, *and* yolde hym to the kynge. and whan he had bydd awhyle at deuelyn, thedyr came all the heghyst Irysh-men of leynystre, and be-soghten pees, and yeldyn ham to the kynge. Roryke Oconghoure, the kynge of connaght, ayeynes the kynges messaungeris at the watyr of shynnyn,—that is [to] Say, hugh de Lacy *and* Willam aldelines Sone,—ther he yelde hym to the kynge; And the kynge of Myth also; So that ther was no man of any reputacioun that he ne come to the * Kyngys owyn Body, or Sent messangeres forto Becomyn Hys man, Saue only thay of vlyster // Than was fulfillid a prophesy that Seynt Molyng sayd: "To-for hym shal foote-fall the pryncys, and, throgh buxumfastnys, the lyme of pees shal vndyrfonge" // Merlynge sayd anothyr prophesy: "To his lyght, the foulys of the yland shullyn to-geddyr fle; and the mest of ham, with har wynges y-brante, shullyn ouer-throwyn in thraldome[1]. the fywe delys shal be broght into one, and the Syxte shal ouercome the Strongyst placis of Irland" / Whan the Mydwyntyr came, many of the heghest men comyn to the kynges courte to feste; *and* mych wondyr thay had of the nobil seruyce that they ther Sawe, and of the mych plente of mete and of drynke, of bordys sette, and fayre clothis vpon; the hey Service of panetrye and buttellerye, and rych wesselis of golde and Syluyr; the many maner metys of kechen, on the maner of Englond, whych they had neuer ther-to-for Seyn[2]. Aftyr that the feste was ryaly holde, euery man went wyth gladnys into his owyn. In that tyme weryn bow-men at Fynglas y-herberowid, and wentyn Into church-hay, and hewyn adown trees that Seyntys by olde tym had ther Sette: there came Sodayn deth vpon ham euerydon.

Capitulum xxvj^m^.

nunciis regiis.. occurrit.

[*Fol. 12 b.]

procident principes, et fucato sub foedere pacis amorem conse- quentur. sextus placis Hiberniae moenia subvertet.

[1] corruent in capturam. [2] Why wasn't this crane bit englisht? 'carne gruina, quam hactenus abhorruerant, regia voluntate passim per aulam vesci coeperunt.'—*Op.* v. 280.

A.D. 1172. Henry II, wishing to purify Irish life, assembles the Clergy at Cashel.

The lond was than yn good pees by-for̄ þe kynge, & þe pees wel I-hold: the kynge had wel y-hard that þe folk of the lond was of vnclene lyf, & ayeyne god & holy chyrche; he thoght that he wold brynge the folk ynto better̄ lyf,* & myche desyr̄ hadde ther̄-to; he leth assembly al þe clergye of þe londe at Casshell, & that me enquered & herd openly the fylthede of the lond-folk yn whych thay ladde har̄ lyf; & setten hyt yn̄ wrytte, vnder̄ the bysshoppes sele of lysmore, that was eke legat of þe court of Rome, & heghest of dygnyte ouer al thay that ther̄ wer̄; & þe statutes of holy chyrche Whych yit men̄ halte, yn þe manere þat holy chyrche ham holte yn Englond, he lete thar̄ sette: whych statutȝ, yn the wordes that thay weren̄ ther̄ I-swewed, ys non harme thegh̄ me expresse ham here :—

NARACIO. [CHAPTER XXVIII.]

NARACIO. The Synod at Cashel, under the Romish Legate, the Bishop of Lismore.

In the yer of our̄ lordes Incarnacion̄ M.C.lxxij, the forme yer̄ that þe kynge of england, henry, Irland wan; Crystyen̄, bysshoppe of lysmore, & legat of̄ þe court of Rome[1]; Dougher̄, Erchebysshoppe of Casshell; laurenȝ, Erchebysshoppe of dyuelyn̄; Cathel, erchebysshoppe of Connaght; wyth leed bysshoppes, Abbotes, priours, & many other̄ prelates of holy chyrche yn Irland, throgh the same kynges commaundement comen̄ to-gedder̄ yn þe See of Casshel; &, for þe state of holy chyrch to brynge yn-to better̄ fourme, helden ther̄ har̄ conssaylle. To thys conseyl, comen̄ these from the kynge I-sent: a noble man Rolf, abbot of byldewdys; Ralf, Erchedekene of landaf; Nychol the prest, & other̄ many, the kynges clerkes & hys messagers. The statutes or̄ constytucions of that consaylle ben̄ these here I-wrytten, & by the kynges auctoryte I-stablet. ¶ The fyrst ys, that crysten men In Irland shvllen leuen̄ har̄ kynnes-wommen † & her̄ sybbes, whyche þay have ar̄ thys I-hold to har̄ wylle out of spoushode, & lawfully spouse other̄ wommen, & spousehede lawfully hold[2]. That other̄ ys, that the chyldren̄, at þe chyrche dorre shullen̄ ben̄ I-primseined[3] of the prestes hond, & yn þe holy fantstones yn har̄ moder chyrches to be I-fulled[4]. The thrydde,

Statutes or Constitutions made at it:—
1. Irishmen shall put away [† Fol 13. b.] their concubine kinswomen, and marry legally.
2. Children shall be baptized in church fonts.

[1] Late sidenote in MS.: 'Establishment of orders for the Clergy, and matters of Religion.'

[2] repudiato cognatarum et affinium contubernio, legitima contrahant matrimonia, et observent.—*Op.* v. 282. [3] catezizentur. [4] baptizentur.

The lond was than in good pees by-for the kynge, and the pees wel holde. the kynge herde that the pepil of the londe was of vnclen lyfe, and ayeyn godd and holy churche. he thogh[t] that he wolde bryng the pepil Into bettyr lyfe; and mych desyr had therto. he Sende for al the clergy of the lond at Casshel; and that he Enquerid and herde opynly the fylthed of the lond-pepill in whych thay lad har lyfe; and Setten hit in writ, vndyr the Bischopis sele of lysmore, that was also legat of the courte of rome, and heyghest of dygnyte ouer al thay that there were. and the Statutes of holy church, whyche yit men halte [1] in the maner that holy church ham holte in England, he lette thare Sette: Whych Statutes, in the Wordis that thay weryn ther Shewyd, is none harme thegh y expresse ham here:— Capitulum xxvij^m^. *tam enormitatibus quam spurcitiis.* Statuta Cassellensia. [1] *quae adhuc extant.*

[CHAPTER XXVIII.]

IN the yere of oure lord-is incarnacyon M^l^. Clxxij, the fryste yere that the kynge of En[g]land, henry, Irland conquerid [2], Crystyn, Byschope of Lysmore, and Legate of the Courte of Rome; Dougher, Archebyschope of Cassel; Laurance, Arcebishope of Deuelyn; Cathel, Arcebyschope of connaght; with othyr Byschopis, abbotis, pryorys, and many othyr prelatys of holy church in Irland, by the same kyngys comaundement comyn to-geddre in the Cee of Casshel; and, for the State of holy church to bryng into bettyr state, heldyn ther har consayle. to this Consayle comyn thes frome the kynge, that is to say: a nobyl-man Rolfe, Abbote of byldewais; Ralfe, Archedekyn of landaf; Nycol the Preste, *and* othyr many of the kyngys clerkys and his messagers // The Statutes or constytuciones of that consayle ben this her writtyn, And by the kynges auctorite Stabelid // The fryst is, that crystyn men In Irland sholde lewe har kynnys-women, whych thay haue ar this holde to har will out of Spoushode, and lawfully spouce othyr women, * and Spoushode Lawfully Holde // The Seconde is, that the chyldryn at the church dore sholde be y-primseined of the prestes honde, and in the holy fantstonys in hare modyr chyrchis to be yfullid. The thyrde, that Capitulum xxviij^m^. *Catholicus Tuotuensis* (*Conactensis*, Harl. 177). *Nicolaus capellanus.* j^m^. *cognatarum et affinium.* ij^a^. [*Fol. 13 b.] iij^a^.

[2] conquesid, MS.

A.D. 1171–2.

that euery crysten man lawfullych pay hys tethynges to hys paroche chyrche, of corne & of al other thynge that a yer hym aneweth[1]. ¶ The ferthe, that al þe londes of holy chyrche & har possessiouns, of al herthly askynge be quyte; & namely, that no kynges ne other heye men, ne her sonnes, ne her meygnees, mette ne herbrowe yn chyrche londes, ne ask, ne wyth streynth ne be so hardy to take; & that Cursed me[te]'that four syth a yer was wonet to be asked yn chyrche tounes, & of the next neghbors, neuer eft be asked. ¶ The fyft, that of manslaghttre that lewed men doth, whan man maketh fyn with hys foman, the clerkes that ben hys kynnes-men, no þynge ne yeue ne yeld ther-to; bot, as thay ben gyltles of the dede, also be thay harmles of þe payement. ¶ The syxth, that whan a man ys seke, he shal make testament openly to-for hys prestes of the parorch, & to-fore hys neghbors; & after hys dettes & seruauntes hyre out take, dele hys catel a thre; yf he hath wyf & chyldren, that on to hys spoused wyf, that other to hys shyldren, The thryde to hys testament. And yf he hath non chyldren by spouse, the good be y-deled bytwene hym & hys wyf, euery Ilyche; & yf the wyf deyeth, the goodes be I-deleth a thre bytwene the housbond, & the chyldren, & the wyf. ¶ The .vij. that whan a man other a woman deyeth, har wathe[2], & the seruyce of holy chyrche, & the buryeng, be man-shyply I-done. ¶ The .viij. that al men & wommen wyrshyppe holy chyrche, & oft go to chyrche; & holy chyrche yn al seruyce be gouerned on the maner that hyt ys yn England. In al these thynges, the kynge ynto the lond come, many defautes wer yn the land I-found, & mych horynesse or oryble synnes that me ne aght nat to speke of, that—throgh grace of god, & by the kynges purueyaunce & hys myght—weren amendet, & yn better wonne I-broȝth. ¶ The prymat of Ardmagh was nat at thys conssaylle, ne theder myght come, for he wase old Man & feble; Bot he come ther-after to dyuelyn, & graunted yn al thyng the kynges purueyaunce. In thys tyme was the weder so stronge, & the wynd so aweyward, that yn al the wyntyr ne myght no shyppe com ouer yn-to Irland.

3. Tithes to be paid.

4. Church lands to be left in peace.

5. Clergy not to pay any of kinsmens fines for Man-slaughter.

6. Wills to be made openly.

Property to go to family in thirds,

or halves.

7. As to funeral services.

8. All folk to go oft to Church.

All Services to be in the English way.

In winter, no ships can get to Ireland.

[1] 16th century side-note: 'the privileges and frydom gyven to the church, and londs ther of.'

[2] ? mistake for 'wache,' or *th* used for *k*, as on p. 67, l. 4.

euery crystyn man lawfully pay his thethis to his Parashe church, A.D. 1171-2.
of corne, and of al othyr thynges that a yere hym aneweth // The iiij^a.
iiij^e. that al the landis of holy church and har Possessiones of al *animalium,*
Erthly askynge be quyte; and namely, that no kynges†, ne othyr hey *frugum,*
men, ne her Sones, ne her menyes, mete ne herbrow in church *ceterarum-*
londys, ne aske / ne with streynth ne be So hardy to take; and that *que proven-*
Cursed met that foure tymes a yere was wonyd to be askyd in *tionum.*
church tounes, and of the nexte neghbores, neuer aftyr to be axed[1]. [† MS. nothynge.]
The V^e, that of manslaghtre that lewid men doth, whan men makyth v^a.
fyne with his enemy, the clerkys that ben his kynnys-men, nothynge *quoties*
ne yeue therto; but, as thay ben gyltles‡ of the dede, also thay be *inde cum*
harmeles of the pament. The vj^e. that whan a man is seke, he *inimicis*
shal make testament opynly, to-for his preste of the parash and *suis com-*
to-for his evyncrystynnes and aftyr his dettis and his seruauntes *ponunt.*
vagis out-take, dele his catel athre. yf he haue wyfe and chyldryn, vj^a.
that on to the Spousyd wyf, that othyr to his chyldryn, the thyrd [‡ MS. glytles.]
to his testament. And yf he haue no childe [by] Spouse, the good be
y-delid betwen hym and his wyfe, euery y-lyke. and yf the wyfe [2] *inter*
deyeth, the good be y-delid at thre[2], betwene the hosbonde, and the *ipsum et*
chyldryn, and the wyfe / The vij^e, that whan a man oþer woman *liberos*
deyeth, har wache, and the seruyce of holy church[3], and the burienge, *bipartiri*
be wyrchiply done // The viij^e. that al men and women wyrchip *debent.*
holy church, *and* ofte go to church; and holy church in al seruyce be vij^a.
gouerned on al maner that hit is in England. In al thes thynges, viij^a.
the kynge Into the lond come[4], many defautes were in the land found, [3] *et missa-*
and mych felth or orribil synnys that y ne oght not to Speke of, *rum et vigi-*
that,—by the grace of god and by the kynges purueyaunce and his *liarum ex-*
myght—weryn amendid, and in bettyr state broght // The Primat *hibitione.*
of Ardmagh was not at this consail, ne thedyr myght come, for he *multimoda*
was olde man and febill. But he come ther-aftyr to deuelyn, and *malorum*
graunted in al thynge the kynges Purueyaunce[5]. In this tyme was *genera.*
the weddyr so stronge, and the wynd so aweyward, that in al the
wyntyr ne myght no shipp come ouer Into Irland. the kynge [5 Harl. 177 ends a chapter here too, and leaves out the Archbp.'s white cow.]

[1] et quod de villis ecclesiarum cibus ille detestabilis, qui quater in anno a vicinis comitibus exigitur, de cetero nullatenus exigatur.—*Op.* v. 282.

[4] Iabl. abs.—Nam ante ipsius adventum in Hiberniam.—*Op.* v. 283.

A.D. 1171–2. The kynge went to Watyrford, & abode ther a whyle, & ful mych desyre adde for to hyr tythynges from beyont see. & of the knyghtes that he fond *yn Irland, he drogh to hym sleghly for o coste the beste: as Reymond, Myles de Cogan, wyllyam Masturel, & other, for to make hys part þe strenger, & the Erles parte the fobler[*so*]. ¶ After the myd-lente, come shyppes yn-to Irland, that hard tythynges hym broght, & lydder, bothe out of engeland & out of fraunce, And normande, & other londes; ffor ynto Normandy weren ycome twey cardinalles, from the poppe Alexander y-sent (that oon heght Albertus, & that other Theodynus), for to serchen & enqueren of the holy martyres deth, seynt Thomas: ryghtful men, as me vnderstond, & to that lawfully y-chosen / natheles thay weren Romayns; & such folweth oft coueytyse; &, bot the kynge come the rather to ham, the kyngedome of england, & al the londes that he was lord of, sholden be entredyted. & (as me fynd oft[1], good aduentures comen oft slowly & aloon, bot mesaduentures ne cometh neuer-more aloon;) wyth thay tythynges comen ther mychel wers, & of more perylle; ffor the kynges sone, henry, the eldest, whyche he so fayne was obout to crowne kynge of England, & other tweyn of hys bretheren, (that throgh yought & foolrede hym folwed, & many drogh to ham, both of england & of beyend þe see,) waren I-swore to-gredder to entre vp-on the kynge, & bynyn hys londes, The whyle that he was yn Irland: & wel may be that hyt was I-purueyed bytwen ham, ar he ynto Irland wente.

[* Fol. 14 a.]

Henry II gets the best Irishmen on his side.

A.D. 1172. He hears bad news:

the probable Interdict on his land, and

the treasonous conspiracy of his sons.

¶ Whan the kynge thys herd, he was[2] yn grete anguysshe. sory he was at the begynnyge, þat he, gyltles, was I-retted of the holy mannes deth; sore he was afred that hys londes shold bene I-shent throght that lydder dede of hys sonne; sore hym forthoght, that he the lond of Irland so sone most fore-lete, whyche he hade y-cast for to streynth with castell, & stable yn pees, the next somer that was to comen. Of al thys, he was yn many thoghtes; & spake ther-of fyrst to hymself, þer-after to hys men. Aftyr many redes, he sent some of hys ynto England by-fore hym; & ther-after he purnyed how he myght sykyrlychest kepe Irland.

He is grievd,

as he wanted to fortify Ireland,

and keep it.

[1] MS. est.

[2] MS. way.

wente to watyrford, and abode ther awhile, and grettely desyr hadd forto hyr thythyngis from be-yont see. And of the knyghtes that he found in Irland, he drew to hym wylely for o Purpos, the beste, as Reymond, Miles de cogan, Willam Masturel and othyr, forto make his parte the strongyr, *and* the Erlis parte the febelier / Aftyr the myd-leynte, come shippis into Irland that[1] screwid thythynges hym broght / out of England, and out of Fraunce, And Normandye, and othyr londes. For into Normandy weryn come two cardynalis, from the pope Alexandre Sende,—that one was callid Albert, *and* that othyr Theodoin,—forto serche and e[n]quere of the holy martires deth, Seynt Thomas. (ryghtful men, as y-vndyrstode, and to that lawfully chose.) [2]Natheles, they were Romanys; *and* such * folwyth ofte covetys[2]; and, But the Kynge come the Sondyr to Hame[3], the Kyngdome of England, *and* al the londys that he was lord of, Sholdyn be Entredytyd, and (as y fynd ofte, good aduentures comyn ofte Slowely and aloon, but mysaduentures ne comyth neuer more al-oon,) Wyth thay thythyngys, comyn moche wors, and of moche more Pereyl. For the kynges sone henry, the eldyst, whych he So fayn was to crovne kynge of England, *and* othyr two of his bretheryn (that throw youuth and fooly hym folwid, *and* many drew to hame both of England *and* of beyonde See,) ware Swern to-giddre/ to Entyr vpon the kynge and take his landis, The whyle that he was in Irland: And hit may wel be, that hit was Purveyed be-twen ham, ar he into Irland went // Whan the kynge this herde, he was in grete a[n]gwysche: Sory he was at the begynnynge, that he, gyltles, was yretted of the holy manys deth[4]. Sore he was aferd, that his londes sholde ben shente throw that vngoodly dede of his Sonnes. Sore hym forthoght, that he the londe of Irland so sone moste leue, whych he had Purposid to streynth wyth castelis, and stabil in pees, the nexte Somer that was to come. Of al this, he was in many thoghtys, and spake therof fryst to hym-Selfe, theraftyr to his men. And aftyr many consalys, he Send Some of his men into England to-for hym; And there-aftyr he Pvrueyed how he myght Svrly kepe Irlande /

A.D. 1171-2.

A.D. 1172.

naves adveniunt, tam gravitatis nunciae, quam pravitatis.

[* Fol. 13 b.]

[3] *nisi citius eis rex occurrerit.*

fratrum puerili levitate secuti, pravissimo consilio.

tam incastellare quam firma stabilire pace.

[1] thad, MS.

[2-2] sed tamen Romani.—*Op.* v. 285.

[4] se tanta tam immerito suspicione notari.—*Ibid.*

A.D. 1172.

Henry II leaves Leaders at Dublin to keep Ireland,

and sails from Wexford on Easter Monday.

At St. Davids, in Wales,

a Welsh-woman complains to him,

[Fol. 14 b.]

he goes on,

and she appeals for vengeance on him, to the stone of Lechlavar,

the 'speaking stone'. (prophesied of by Merlin

which lies over a stream N. of the church yard.

As a corpse was carried over it, the stone spoke.

He left at dyuelyn, the cyte & the contray to kepe, hught de lassy, wyth .xx.ti knyghtes; Robert steuenes-sone, & Moryce fytz Geraud, wytht other .xx.ti at Waterford; hunfrey de boun, Robert Bernardesson, & hugh de Gundeuyl wyth .xl.ti knyghtes; At weysford, wyllyam Al-delines-sone[1] & phylppe de Breuse wyth .xx.ti knyghtes. And a morow after Estre day herly, he dydde hym to saylle at Weysford, & arryued at seynth dauyes, sone after none. Whan he come a lond, he went wyth grete deuoccion to the modyr chyrche, as a pylgrymage, a-foot, with a burdon yn hys hond. Come the chanons of the chyrche ayeyne hym at the whyte yate, & with fayr processioun, with mych reuerence, & with mych manshype, hym receyued. As þe processyoun yede a rewe to-for hym, come a walche womman, & fel hym to þe feet, & made a myche mone, yn hyre langage, of the bysshope of that place. The [kynge] stode, & herd hyr mone || of an yntерpretour-es mouth that hyt hym told; & for he went forth, & dydde hyr no ryght anoon as tho wolde, she smote hyr handes to-gyddre, & bytterly began to crye tofore ham Al, a walshe langage, "A-wreke vs to-daye, lahlauar! A-wreke our kynred & our folke of thys man!" Thay that vnderstode hyr speche, put hyr away, & fore-bade hyre cryynge; & sho so mych the more cryed yn the same manere, & hoped to an old prophecye that Merlyn seyd: "The kynge of england that shal wyn Irland shal be I-woundet yn Irland of a man with a rede hond; & as he cometh ayeyne by south wales, he shal deye vpon lehlauar:" Þat was þe name of a stone, that lay ouer a streme by north the chyrche heye of seynt dauyes, yn stydde of a brygge. The stone was of Marbel wel fayr, & smothe of mannes geynge, & hadde .x. feet yn leynth, & .vi. yn brede, & a foot thykke. And ys 'lehlauar,' a walshe, as mych to sygge as 'a spekynge stone.' And hyt was ytold, that som tyme as me bar a dede body ouer that stone, he began to speke; & wyth the spech he claue throghout; & yit the clyft ys I-sene, & yit yn-to thys day me be-bereth no dydde body ouer that stone. The kynge come to that stone, & bethoght

[1] Weisefordiae, vero Guillelmo Aldelini filio, Philippo de Hastinges, et Philippo de Breusa.—*Op.* v. 286. [William Fitz-Audeline.]

HE lefte at Deuelyn the Cite and the contray to kepe Hugh de Lacy *with* xx^ti. knyghtes, Robert Steuenes-Sone and Morice fiz-geraud, wyth othyr xx^ti.; at Wat*er*ford Humfr*e*y de bonn, R*o*b*er*t Barnardes-Sone and Hugh de Gondeuyl, *with* xl. knyghtes / At Weysford, Willam Aldelines sone *and* Philip de Bruse, *with* xx^ti. knyghtes. And amorrow, *aftyr* estyr-day, Erly he did hym to Sayle at Weysford *and* londid at Seynt dauyes sone aftyr noone. Whan he come alond he went wyth grete deuocion to the modyr church as a Pylgrymage afoote *with* a stafe in hande. Come the chanon*es* of the church ayeynes hym at the white yate; and wyth fayr*e* processioun[1], wyth mych reuerence *and* wyth mych wirchip, hym resceiwid. And as the Procession yede arew to-for hym, come a Walch woman, *and* fel to-for his feete, and made mych mone in hyr Speche of the Bischop of that Place. He stod, and herde hyr complaynte of an interpr*e*toure-es mouth that hit hym tolde; and, for he wente forth, and did hyr no ryght anoone as sho wolde, She smote hyr handis togiddyr and bittyrly began to cry to-for ham al in walch Speche: "A-wreke vs to-day, lathlauar! wreke our kynred and our pepil of this man!" Thay that vndyrstode hyr Speche, Put hyr away, and forbade hyr cryynge. She so mych the mor*e* cried in the Same maner, and hopid to an olde prophesy that Merlynge sayde[2]: "The kynge of England that shal conquere Irland [shal be wounded in Ireland of a man[3]] *with* a rede hand, and as he comyth ayeyn by South walis, he shal dye vpon lethlauar": that was the name of a stone, that lay ouer a streme[4] by north the churchey of Seynte dauyes, instyd of a brige. The stone was of marbill, * Wel fayr and smoth of men goynge, and was of x fote in Leynth, and vj in Brede, and O foote thykke. And is 'lethlauar' in walch, as mych to say as 'a spekynge ston*e*': and hit was tolde, that Some tyme that whan ther wase a dede body y-bor*e* ouer that stone, he began to speke; *and* wyth the speche he clewe throgh[5]-out; and yit the clyfte as Seyn. And sithyn on-to this day, thay berryth no ded body ouer that stone. The kynge come to that stone, and bethogh[t]

Capitulum xxix^m.

A.D. 1172.

Hugone de Gundevilla.

devoto peregrinantium more, pedes, baculoque suffultus.

quoniam jus suum inconcinenti non est assecuta.

[3] *ab homine cum rubra manu in Hibernia vulneratum.*

[4] *qui trans flumen Aluni . . . jacens.*

[* Fol. 14 a.]

Lapis loquax

ipso cunctante crepuit medius.

[1] canonicorum ecclesiae processionem . . . invenit.—*Op.* v. 286.

[2] alludens illi fictitio vulgari, nec vero Merlini proverbio, quo dici solebat.—*Op.* v. 287.

[5] throght, MS.

A.D. 1172. Henry II walks over the stone, and asks 'Who'll now believe the liar Merlin?'

hym of that prophecye. & he stode at þe stones end & grymly hyt be-hold; & awhyle ther-after, boldely yede ouer a good paas. & whan he was ouer, he turned ayeyne to þe stone, & deynously þus seyd: "Whō shal heten-forward beleue Merlyn the leyer?" A man stode þer besyde & herd, & wold, hys thankes, saue þe prophetes sawe, Answard the kynge & seyd, "Thou art nat that kynge that shal Irland conquer; ne Merlyn ne speketh nat of the." Thus the kynge went yn-to the chyrch, yn seynt Andrees & seynt dauyes wyrshyppe I-sette, & herd hys masse of a preste that was I-found fastynge, as god wold. After masse, he eete hys mete ther, & after mete wente to hauerford, than ouer .xl. myle; ffrom thens he wente hastyly yn-to englande; out of enland yn-to Normandy, & come to-for þe cardynalls with mych buxumnesse at Custance. Ther, after myche dalyaunce & many wordes I-spoke, he excused hym by othes of þe holye Martyres deth, that he was nat by hym I-slaw; bot he ne for-sok nat that he nas for hym; & þerfor he vndretoke such penaunce as holy chyrche hym wold loke. Þe cardynals, he sent ayeyne wyth myche wyrshyppe; & noon he went to þe marche, & ther he spake with the kynge of ffraunce. þer, (throgh besechynge of hegh men, & namely of phylepe þe erl of flaundres, that from seynt James was ryght than I-come,) the pees was made betwene the twey kynges, of the wreth that was betwene ham for the forseyd martyres deth; ffor-thy that þe kynge of ffraunce, with other mychel & myghty men, name an hand to the erchebysshopp whan he shold turne ayeyne yn-to England, [ayeyn] the pees betwen the kynge & hym. ffor þer was pees thus y-made betwene the kynges, al the harme þat the sones with har allyees hadden throght to do, was I-lost tyl þe next yere theraftyr.

He hears Mass, and goes to Haverford, and Normandy.

He swears that he didn't slay Beket, but he does penance,

and makes peace with King Lewis of France.

[CHAPTER XXX.]

[Fol. 15 a.] Wnder this, as the lond of Irland was yn good pees vnder ham that weren In lefte, the lond for to kepe, byfelle that a day of parlement, at a certeyne place, was betaken by-twene hugh de lacy, whom the kynge had I-yeue dyuelyn to kepe with trust, And þe kynge of Myth. a nythe, whan the parlement shold ben a morow, a knygh[t] that was Moryce fytz Geraudes neuew, & Robert Gryffyn by name, thoght yn hys

Hugh de Laci and O'Rourke, King of Meath, meet.

hym of that prophesy, and he stod at the stone his ende, and grymly hit be-helde; and a whyle ther-aftyr, boldely yede ouer a good pace. *and* whan he was ouer, he turnyd ayeyne to the stone, *and* deynously thus sayde: "Who shal, fro this forth, beleue Merlynge the lyer?" A man stode ther bysyd, and herde, *and* wolde, his thankes, Sawe the prophet-is Saynge, Answerid the kynge and Sayde, "Ye ben not that kyng that shal Irland conquere, ne Merlyng Spekyth not of yow" / Thus the kynge went into the church of Seynt Androwis and seynte dauyes, and herde his masse of a preste that was founde fastynge, as god wolde. Aftyr masse he ette his mette and aftyr mette went to hauerford than othyr xv myle. Frome thens he went forth hastely Into England, out of England into Normandy and come to-for the cardynals with mych buxumnesse at Custaunce. Ther, aftyr mych delyaunce *and* many wordys spoke, he excusid hym by othys of the holy martyris deth that he was not by hym Slayn, but he forsoke not that he was for hym. And ther-for he vndyrtoke such Penaunce as holy church wolde hym enyoyn̄. the Cardynalls, he sende ayeyn with mych wirchip; and anoone he went to the marche, *and* there he spake wyth the kynge of Fraunce. There, (throgh besechynge of good men, *and* namely of Phylippe the Erle of Flandris, that frome Seynt Iamys was than come,) the Pees was made betwen the two kynges, of the wreth that was betwen ham for the forsayd martires deth; [1] For-they that the kynge of Fraunce, with othyr mychel men *and* myghty / And vndyrtoke to the archebischope, whan he shold turne Into Englan, ayeyn̄ the pees be-twen the kynge *and* hym. For ther was Pees thus made betwen the kynges, al the harme that the Sonnes, with hare allyences, haddyn thoght to do, was left til the nexte yere ther-Aftyr.

A.D. 1172.

verbum hoc indignanter emisit.

quasi per miliaria duodecim abinde distans.

ad marchiam cum Francorum rege Lodovico . . .

[1] *puta quem Anglorum rex archipraesuli in Angliam redditurо . . . fidejussorem donaverat.*

[CHAPTER XXX.]

VNdyr this, as the lond of Irland was in good pees vndyr ham that weryn lefte, the londe for-to kepe, by-fel on a day, that a certayn Place, to a parlement was sette, be-twen Hugh de Lacy, to whom the kynge had yewe Deuelyn to kepe wyth truste, and the kynge of myth. On a nyght, whan the Parlement shulde ben amorrow, a knyght, that was Morice fiz-geraudes eme, *and* Robert Gryffyn by name, thoght in his

Capitulum XXX^m.

et regem monoculum Ororicium Medensem.

A.D. 1172. Griffith Fitz-Gerald's dream: he saves De Laci, & Maurice Fitz-Gerald.

slepe that he saw a mych flote of wylde swyne yernynge vp-on hugh & moryce; & a boore amonge ham, myche & grysly ouer al other, come toward ham, & with hys tuskes wold haue smytten ham & I-slawe, yf he stalwarthly ne had y-come betwene, & I-slawe the bore, & I-holpe ham bothe. A morow, thay went to þe place ther þe parlement was I-sette, at a place that me hath seth y-cleped 'rorykes hylle': ffyrst thay helden har parlement from fer, by messagers goynge betwen; ther-after thay name sekernesse of othes I-sworne, & comen to-geddre by forward; natheles few, & ylych fale on ether halue, and thay vnwepened,—bot the one, her swerdes; & the other, her sparthes,—& ether of har folke somdel fer from ham. Gryffyn, that with Moryce was to the parlement I-come, was ful thought-ful of the vysyon that he sawe. he name to hym seuyn knyghtes of hys owne kyn, than that ho moost truste to har stalwardnesse, & drowen ham on the on halfe of the hylle, as neyght as thay myght leppen vpon har stedes, with sheldes about har nekkes, & speres an-hond; & for a coste, pleneden & prykkeden har hors ayeyn other, so that, yn whych halue the parlement turned, throght encheson of such pley thay myght be fonden Redy. Roryk & hugh helden har parlement of many thynge; bot of nothynge thay myght nat accord, & begyn to departe a wrethe. The traytour Roryk had yn hys thoght þe trayson þat he hadde I-purueyed. he made semblant, & draw hym by-halues as for to pyssen, & made tokens to hys men that thay hastely shold come to hym. Whan he thys hadde I-done, he turned ayeyne wyth hys sparth an hegh, hys wysage al blak with ful snel goynge. Moryce was Iwarned of hys neueu, of the vysyon that he sawe; stod, & beheld al thys. he hent out þe swerd, & cryed vpon hugh, & mynyed hym, & dyd hym-self ayeyne the traytour, for to defend hym. The traytour ran to hugh, hym for to smyte; har latymer yed betwene hym & the dynt; & he smote hym of the oon arme, fast by the sholdre. Moryce stode, & campled wyth hys swerd ayeyne the sparthe, & lowd cryed to har men. & ar hugh myght be yn any state, hym-self for to helpe, throgh grete hastynge, he felle twys ‖ abak; & vnnethe, throgh helpe of Moryce, that hym defendet thus, Hugh escaped wyth hys

Griffith keeps seven trusty knights near.

O'Rourke treacherously attacks De Laci.

Maurice Fitz-Gerald warns De Laci,

who is saved by his interpreter, and [‖ Fol. 15 b.] escapes

Slepe that he Saw a mych flote of wylde Swyn yernynge vpon Hugh *and* Morice; *and* a bore amonge ham, mych *and* grymly ouer al other, come to ham, *and* wyth his tuskys wolde haue smytten ham Slayn, yf he boldely ne had come betwene, *and* Slayne * the Boore, and Holpyd Hame Both. On the morrow, thay Went to the Place ther the Parlement was sette, at a place that Sedyn is callid "Rorike-is hille." Fryste thay heldyn har Parlement from fere, by messageres goynge betwen; ther-aftyr thay toke Surtey, *and* othis Sware, *and* comyn to-giddyr aftyrward. Natheles fewe, *and* ylyke many on euery syde, *and* thay vnwepenyd,—but the on, her Swerdys; the othyr, her Sparthes,—and her fellechip in euery syde fere fro ham. Gryffyn, that wyth Moryce come to the Parlement, was ful thoghtful of the vysion that he Saw; he name to hym Sewyn knyghtis of his owyn kyn, tham that he most truste to har bolthenys, and drowen ham on the one halfe of the hille / as neye as thay myght, Leppen vpon har stedes, with sheldis about har nekkes, *and* Sperres in honde, and for oo Purpos pleydyn and prikkedyn in the felde ayeyne othyr, So that in what syde the Parlement turnedyn, throgh encheyson of Suche Pley, thay myght be foundyn redy. Rourik and Hugh kepten har Parlement of many thyngis; but in nothynge thay myght acorde, *and* begon to de-Pert, as in wrethe. The traytoure Rourik had in his thoght / the trayson that he hadd Purueyed: he made semblant, and drow hym be-sydis as forto Pissyn, *and* made tokyn to his men that thay hastely sholde come to hym. Whan he this had done, he turned ayeyne with his sparth an hey, his face al blake with ful snel goynge. Morice was warnyd of his eme by the vysyon that he sawe; stode, and be-helde al this. he toke out his Swerde, and cried vpon Hugh, *and* mynyd hym, *and* did hym-Selfe agayn the traytoure, forto defende hym. The traytoure rane agayn hugh, hym forto smyte. har latymer yed betwen hym and the stroke; and he smote of hym the oone harme of, fast by the shuldyr. Morice stode, and camplid with his Swerde ayene the Sparthe[1], *and* loude cried to har men. And ar hugh myght be in any state[2], hym-Selfe forto helpe, throgh grete hastynge, he fel twies a-bac; *and* vnneth, throgh helpe of Morice, that hym defendid

[*Fol. 14 b.]

horribilem et grandem prae aliis.

praeter hinc gladios tantum, inde secures.

ex industria tornamentis Gallicis praeludia faciebant

simulans ad mingendum. vultu pallido.

praemuniens et suscitans. viri interpretis . . . letali vulnere brachium amputavit.

[1] *contra securim gladio confligebat.*

[2] staste, MS.

A.D. 1172. lyf. The whyll that thys was, Rorykes men ful many come to hys clepynge, out of dales & wodes about, yernynge to ham wyth speres & *with* sparthes, for to brynge hugh & Moryce out of dawes. Than Gryffyn & hys felewes comeñ yernynge vp on har hors styffly to ham. þe traytouꝛ saw ham comynge, & lep to hors that to hym was broght, & wold do hym to flyght; & as he lep*e*, vp come Gryffyñ, & wyth hys spere smote hym & hys hors throghout, & slowe hem bothe. Wyth hym weꝛ I-slayne þay that, yn so mych p*er*ylle, the hors hym broght; & hy[s] heed I-smytten of, & yn-to england þ*er*-aft*er* to the kynge I-sent; & al hys men yn-to al the feldes dyscomfyte, & I-slawe ful many. Rolf, Rob*er*tes sone fytz Stephen, was the otheꝛ stalwardthest that daye yn the felde[1].

O'Rourke is slain by Maurice Fitz-Gerald.

[CHAPTER XXXI.]

[Fol. 16 a.] Morice was a mane ful wyrshypful & chamfaste; vysage wel colowred; becomlyche; lytel of body, sum*d*ele more þan lytel, & lasse than metlych. of hert, & body, wel I-thewed; nothynge hauteyne. of k[i]ndly goodnes, he was good; & leu*er* hym was be good, thañ be sey good; hys man*er* was eu*er*-more to hold hym methelyche. man of short spech & lytel, bot of fayꝛ wordes, as he that more hadde yn hert than yn mouth, more of wytte & reysoñ þan of spech. [2] Nat forthy[3], whan tyme was, & nede to sp[e]ken, to good reysoñ forth brynge,—as lettred as he was, as wytty he was[2]. In thynge that byfell to bataylle, swyth hardy, & vnnethes of stalwarthnesse any was hys bettre; natheles, of p*er*ille to take, he was nat to hastyf ne to fool-hardy. bot as he was thus, & of p*ur*ueaunce thynge to begynne, Also he was stronge & stydfast yn thynge Whañ he hyt hadde begune. he was sobre, wel I-thewed & chaste, lawful, & stydfast, w*ith*out blame.

Maurice Fitz-Gerald described. He spoke little, was very bold, but not fool-hardy, was strong and sted-fast.

A.D. 1173.

[CHAPTER XXXII.]

In the next auril theꝛ-aft*er*, þe yongeꝛ kynge henry, þe kynges sone, the lyddernysse that he hadde I-thoght to hys

In April, Henry II's three sons,

[1] The twelve lines on the back of fol. 15, 'a bak (p. 74, at foot) . . . felde,' were first written by mistake on fol. 16, but afterwards struck out.

[2-2] Et tamen, cum sermonem res exigebat, ad sententiam dicendam sicut serus, sic scientissimus.—*Op.* v. 297.

[3] ? MS. Rat fortly.

thus, Escapid wyth his lyfe. the whyle that this was, Rourik his men, ful many, come to his callynge, out of dalis and woddis about, rynnynge to ham *with* Speres and Sparthes, forto berew hugh Morice the lyfe. Than gryffyn and his fellouys come rynnynge vpon har hors styfly to ham. the traytoure Saw ham comynge, *and* lep to hors that to hym was broght, *and* wolde do hym to flyght / And as he lep, vp come gryffyn, *and* wyth his spere smote hym *and* his hors throght-out, *and* slayne them both. wyth hym were Slayn thay that, in so myche Peril, the hors hym broght / and his hed Smytten of / *and* into England theraftyr to the kynge hit sende; and al his men into al the feldis discomfite, and Slayn ful many / Rolfe, Robert-is Sone, fiz-Steuyñ, was the othyr boldyste that day in the felde. A.D. 1172. *cum jaculis binis et securibus amplis.* *cum ipso, tribus ejusdem familiaribus.*

[CHAPTER XXXI.]

MOrice was a man ful wyrchipphul *and* shamefaste; [1]vysage wel colorid; becomlych; lytil of body, sume-whate more than lytel *and* lasse than metlych. of herte and body, wel thewed; nothynge couetynge. of * Kyndely goodnes, He was good[1]; ande Leuer hit Was to Hym to Be good, than to Be sayde good. his maner was euer-more to holde hym methelyche. man of Shorte Speche *and* lytyll, but of Fayre wordis, as he that more had in herte than in mouthe, more of witte and Reyson than of speche. Nat forthy, whan tyme was, and nede to Spekyn, to good reyson forth brynge,—as letterid as he was, as witty he was. In thynge that befel to battayl, Swyth hardy. But as he was thus, *and* of Purueyance, thynge to begyn, Also he was stronge *and* stydfast in thynge whan he hit hadd begonne. [2]he was sobyr, wel condicionyd *and* chaste, lawful and stidfaste, wyth-out blame[2] / Capitulum xxxj^m^. Descripcio Maurici fizgeraud. [*Fol. 15 a.] *plus pectoris habens quam oris, plus rationis quam orationis, plus sapientiae quam eloquentiae.*

[CHAPTER XXXII.] A.D. 1173.

IN the nexte Aurel ther-aftyr, the yongyr kynge henry, the kynges Sonne, the Wickidnys that he had thoght to his fadyr done / nolde no longyr helle, wyth his two bretheryn that Capitulum xxxij^m^.

[1–1] vultu colorato, decentique; mediocri quadam modicitate, tam mediocribus minor, quam modicis major; vir tam animo quam corpore modificato, nec illo elato, nec hoc dilutato; innata vir bonitate bonus.—*Op.* v. 297.

[2–2] Vir sobrius, modestus et castus; stabilis, firmus atque fidelis.—*Ibid.*

A.D. 1173. fadyr nold no lenger hellen; *with* hys twey bretherēn—that ys to wytte, the Erl of peytou & the erl of brytayn[1]—wenten to the kynge of ffraunce, whose doghter he hadde I-spoused, & p*ur*chased helpe of hym for to werr vpon hys fadyr. The encheson wher-for hyt was, Mayst*er* Geraud ne telleth nat, ne I ne can nat sey; bot many hegh & Ryche men he hadde to consaylle & to helpe, both of Engl*and* & of beyend the see; many openly & wel; most, illy & dernely. The old kynge, the yonger kynges fadyr, for the fortune that hym come to on eu*ery* halue so vnwarly, was ful sorowful.

Henry, Richard and Geoffrey, get French help, and rebel.

Henry II

draws most of his men from Ireland. They come to him at Rouen. [† Fol. 16 b.]

¶ Nathales, throgh gret sleght & hegh herth, he made fayr semblant, & heped to god; & on eu*ery* syde that he myght, yn al man*er* he besoght help. He sent messagers ynto Irland, & mad come ou*er* to hym the meste p*ar*te of the knyghtes & of the good meygne þat he ther hadde I-lefte. Thay come to hym at the cyte of Ruem, & he bethogh hym that † hyt was p*er*ylle to leue har lond vnkepet; ther he betoke þe Erl Rychard al þe lond to kepe, & sette to hym Reymond as hys other hand; ffor the erl for-soke al out & out, þat he that kepynge wold nat receyue, bot yf he hadde Reymond *with* hym for to helpe.

He commits Ireland to Earl Striguil and Reimund Fitz-Gerald.

[CHAPTER XXXIII.]

Most Irish, hearing of the Princes' rebellion, turn against Henry II.

The Erle [&] Reymond, *with* har power, wentten yn-to Irland; &, for the folk of yrland hade y-hard of the mych stryff that was betwene the kynge & hys sonnys be-yent the see,—as folk þat styddefast ys yn vnstedfastnesse, & lawfully ham holt to vnlawfulnesse,—the most p*ar*te of the prynces of þe lond, ayeyn har trouth I-found, þay turned ayeyn-to the kynge. The erl hadde sone I-spend the traysour that he broght ou*er* wyth hym; & whan the meygne lacked spendynge, & nat spedden yn pr*ay*es takyn*g*e vnder heruy, that was conestable ou*er* the meygne, & eu*er* hadde enuy to Reymond, Thay wenten ham to the erl comynly by one accorde, & sey hym wel, that 'bot yf he wold sete Reymond ou*er* ham, thay wold leue hym eu*ery*chone, & wend yn-to england; oþer, that wel wors was, thay wold turnet to har enemyes ayeyns har heed.' As the meygne wold, Reymond was I-sette ou*er* ham; thay name than hert to ham, & wenten vpon the Ofolanes yn the dees,

The English demand to be put under Reimund Fitz-Gerald.

They invade Offaly, in Leinster,

[1] Pictaviae scilicet et Britanniae comitibus.—*Op.* v. 297-8.

is to Say, the Erle of Peytou *and* the Erle of Brytayn, wentyn to the kynge of Fraunce, whose doghtyr he had Spousid, *and* Purchasid helpe of hym forto were vpon his fadyr. The encheyson wherfore hit was, Maystyr Geraud ne tellyth not / ne I ne can not say; but many hey men he hade to consayl and to helpe, both of England *and* of beyonte see; many opynly *and* wel; [more] falthyr pryuely. The olde kynge, the yongyr kynges fadyr, for the fortvne that to hym was fal on euery syde so vnwyttyngly, was ful Sorroful. Neuer-the-las, by grete Sotylte *and* hey herte, he made fayre semblante, *and* trystid to god; *and* on euery syde that he myght, in al maner he besoght helpe. he sende messageres into Irland, *and* made come ouer to hym the meste Parte of the knyghtes and of the good mennye that he ther lefte. Thay come to hym at the Cite of Ruem. *and* he be-thoght hym that hit was Peril to leue har londe vnkepte: ther he be-toke the Erle Richard, al the londe to kepe, and sette to hym Reymonde as his othyr hande; For the Erle forsoke out and out, that he that kepynge wolde not rescewe, but yf he hadde Reymond wyth hym, hym forto helpe.

A.D. 1173.

ad Lodovicum, Francorum regem.

multo plures occulte habens, et fautores.

ad urbem Rothomagensem.

custodiam illam suscipere omnino renuerat.

[CHAPTER XXXIII.]

The Erle and Reymond, *with* har men, wentyn Into Irland; and, for þe Pepil of Irland had herde of the grette stryfe that was betwene the kyng and his Sonnes be-yount the See,—as Pepyl that stydfast is in vnstydfastnes, *and* lawfully ham holde to vnlawfulnes,—the most Part of the Pryncis of the londe, agayñ har trouth y-founde, thay turned agayn the kynge. The Erle had spende the tresoure that he broght ouer wyth hym; *and* whan the fellochipe lackid spendynge, *and* not Speddyn in Prayestakynge, Vndyr heruey, that was constabil ouer the menny, and euer had envy to Reymond; Thay wenten ham to the Erle comynly by oone acorde, *and* sayde to hym wel, 'but that he wolde sette Reymonde ouer ham, thay wolde lewe hym euerichone, *and* wende Into Englande; othyr, that wel wors was, thay wolde turne to har enemys agaynes hame' / And as the menny desyrid, Reymonde was sette ouer hame. thay take then herte to ham, *and* wenten vp-on the Ofelanys in the deseses, and toke grette

Capitulum xxxiij^m.

gens sola constans inconstantia.

deficientibus quoque stipendiis.

in Offelanos insurgentes.

A.D. 1173. & name grett *pr*ayes, arrayed ham nobly wyth hors & wepne.

Lismore, &c., and take much prey.

From thens thay wentten to lysmore, & the cyte, & al þe contre about, robbeden & *pr*ayeden, & by the see wey senten many grete *pr*ayes to Watyrford; & of pylfre & thynge that thay nam̃en, thay fylled .xiij. far costes that weren I-come fro Wat*er*ford yn-to the hauen of dongaruame. As thay wer wynd abydynge, ther come þe men of Cork from by west, by the sẽe, yn xxxij shyppys, & many men ther-In, for to take thay other. Ther was the fyght styffely I-yeuen, of these twey fletes yn the see: That oon assaylled that other grymlych *with* stones & *with* sparthes; the other weren welle I-wepned, & *with*-stode styffly *with* arblastes & *with* bowes.

The English fleet fight a Cork fleet,

rout it, and kill its men, and take their prizes to Waterford.

At þe end, thay of Corke weren descomfyted & ou*er*-come; her shyppys I-take; her men I-slawe, & I-caste yn the see. Adam de herford & phylep de Wellsse, that weren I-sette ou*er* thay yonglynges, w*i*th mo shyppes & grete beyetes of wepne & of pylfre, to Watyrford wenten *with* grete yoye. Reymond herd speke of thys fyght, & tythynges to hym come; he toke w*i*th hym xx*ti* knyghtes & an hundreth bowmen, & went by the see wey thederward. Than come to hym tythynges þat dermot, þe prynce of desmond, was, *with* myche hostes, comen to lysmore, to helpe ham of Cork.

Reimund marches,

Dermot daren't face him.

Reymond went hym thederward. þe prynce that herd, & turned ayeyne, & durst hym nat abyde. And Reymond went forther yn-to the contrey, robbed & *pr*ayed, so that he hadde *with* hym at hys turny[*n*]ge aye toward Watyrford, four thousand kyne; & as thay wer comynge || by narow weyes wyth har *pr*aye, come the Ireshemen of þe contray, & henten a party of har kyne, & wenten al quytten *with* ham to wodde. þe crye arose, & Reymond[1] (as man that eu*er* was formost redy) went aftyr, *with* on̄ *pri*uisant man an hors wyth hym; come to the woddes ense[2], ther the theues weren an hydynge. Whan he hadde I-faylled of þe preye, & wolde turne ayeyne, hys felewes folyly entyced hym for to wende yn-to þe wodde, & he so dydde. Whan thay weren wel *with*-yn,

Reimund has 4,000 cattle.

[|| Fol. 17 a.]

The Irish take some.

He pursues them into a wood.

[1] The Latin text gives this exploit to Meiler: Gir. Cambr. *Op.* v. 309–10, 'et in primis Meilerius, ut erat praeceps semper et probus, satellite quodam comitatus equestri, praedones usque ad silvae condensa est persecutus.'

[2] Ends.

Prayes arrayed ham nobely *with* hors and wepyñ. From thens thay wentyn to lysmore; *and the Cite and the contrey about, robbodyn *and* preedyn, *and*, By the See-wey, Sendyne many gret prayis to waterford; and of pilfre *and* of thynge that thay toke, thay fillid xiij^e. farcostes that weryn come from watyrford into the havyn of doũn-garvan. As thay were wynde abydynge ther, come the men of Corke from be weste, by the See, in xxxij^ti. Shippis, *and* many men therin, forto take the othyr. ther was the fyght fressely yewyn of this two flittes in the See. That oone assaylid the othyr grymly *with* stones and *with* Spar this; the othyr wer wel wepenyd, *and* wythstod styfly *with* arblastes *and with* bowes[1]. At the Ende, thay of Corke weryn dyscomfyted and ouer-come; Her shippis take, her men slayne, *and* caste Into the See. Adam de herforde *and* Philippe[2] the wellsshe, that weryn sette ouer thay yonglynges, *with* mo shippes *and* gret begetes of wepyn and of Pylfre, to Watyrford wentyn *with* gret Ioy. Reymond herde speke of this fight, *and* tythynges to hym come: he toke *with* hym xx^ti. knyghtes and an hundrid bowmen, *and* went by the see-way thedyrwarde. Than com to hym tythyngis that Dermot, the prince of desmonde, was *with* myche hostys comyn to lysmore, to helpe ham of Corke. Reymonde wentyn hym thedyrward: the prince that herde, *and* turned agayn, *and* durst hym not abyde. And Reymonde wente Ferdyr Into the[3] contrey, robbid *and* Prayed, So that he hadd *with* hym at his turnynge agayn toward watyrford, iiij^e. M^l. kyne. and as thay were comynge by naroweis wyth har Pray, come the Irysshmen of the contray, *and* tokyn a party of har kyne, *and* wentyn al quyte *with* ham to wodde. the cry aros, *and* Reymond, as man that euer was formyst redye, went aftyr, *with* one pryuisant man an hors *with* hym, come to the woddys syd ther the thewis were an-hydynge. Whan he had falid of the pray, *and* wolde haue turne agayne, his fellowis folely Enticed hym forto wende into the wodd; *and* he so dide. Whan

A.D. 1173. [*Fol. 15 b.]

naviculas tredecim.

bellicosis refertas viris.

cum armis et oneribus.

per maritimam viam.

ad silvas de plano.

juvene instigante temerario

[1] dum isti lapidibus et securis acriter impetunt, illi vero, tam sagittis quam laminis ferreis quibus abundabant, promptissime resistunt.—*Op.* v. 309.

[2] Philpippe, MS.

[3] the the, MS.

A.D. 1173-4. Reimund is attackt, but cuts his way thro' his foes.

the Irysshe-men rysse to ham on euery halue, & leyd ham oñ, & anooñ-ryght the yonge mañ was al to-hakked to-for hym; he yarne to snellych for to socuꝛ hym, & was assaylled oñ euery halue; & he, as man, hent out the swerd & leyd on about hym, & smot of that mañ the hond, þat otheꝛ the arme, þe þryd the heede by þe sholdres; thus he opened hym the wey, & come out to hys men, & broght twey sparthes fast on hys sheld, & thre on hys hors[1]; bot all hool & sound, & harmeles of body, he escaped.

A.D. 1174.

[CHAPTER XXXIV.]

Whan thys was y-done, & the meygne was noblych arrayed both byl ond & eke by watyꝛ, come tythynges to Reymond, that hys fadyꝛ Wyllyam fytz Geraud was dede.

Reimund goes to Wales. Hervey is made Constable.

Reymond went ouere yn-to Walys, to take seysyne yn hys fadyꝛ landys; & heruy was the whyle eft[2] y-made conestable of þe meygne: he wold fayne entremette hym to do some thynge the whyle that Reymond was out of londe, & made the Erl & the meyne wend to Casseli for to weren yn Monestre; he sent eke after the meyne of dyuelyn to come to ham. And as thay come throgh Ossery, & laye a nyght yn a place thaꝛ thay supposed to be al sykeꝛ, Obreen, the kynge of thomone, was sykeꝛ, & awayted haꝛ comynge by good spies. he aroos with mych folk vpon hem erly a day yn the merowenynge, & smot vpon ham vnwyttyngly, & slogh fouꝛ knyghtes that weren ouer ham, & fouꝛ hundret ostmen. Whan the tythynges heꝛ-of come to the Erl, he turned ayeyne to Waterford with mych shame, & held hym thaꝛ as man that was beseget, that he cam nat fro thennes. And for thys aduentuꝛ, the folk of Irland wyth oo hert al to-gyddre aresen vpon the englysshe, & slow ham yn-to al theꝛ thay myght ham fynd. The kynge of Connaght come eke ouer the shynen yn-to Myd, & fond al þe castels wast & voyde; he brant & keste ham adoun to ground, tyl he come ryght to dyuelyñ. The Erl saw þat he was narow by-ladde: by consaylle of hys men, as the last remedy of lyue, he sent hys lettres to Reymond ouer yn-to Walys, yn these

Donnell O'Brien slaughters the Dublin men.

The Irish massacre the English.

[1] tres secures Hibernicas in equo confixas, duasque in clipeo portans.—Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 310.

[2] MS. est.

thay wer *with*-In the Irysh-men rysse to ham on euery halue *and* leyde on ham, *and* anoone the yonge man was al to-hackid to-for hym. He rane forto socour*e* hym, *and* was assaylid on eu*e*ry syde. And he, as man, toke out his Swerde, *and* leyde on aboute hym, *and* Smote of, that man the honde, that othyr the harme, the thyrde the hede by the sholdris; thus he oppenyd the wey, *and* come out to his men, and broght two Spar*e*s faste on his shelde, and thre on his hors; but al holde and Sounde *and* harmeles of body he Escapid. A.D. 1173-4.

exserto gladio, viam sibi vir animosus viribus aperuit.

[CHAPTER XXXIV.] A.D. 1174.

Whan this was done, *and* the meyne was nobely arrayed both by londe *and* also by watyr / come thythyngis to Reymonde, that his Fadyr willam fiz-geraude was dede. Reymond wente ou*e*r into Walis, to take seysyne in his Fadyr landis; And heruey that tyme was made constabil of the meny. he wolde fayn entremitte hym to done sumthynge, the whyle that Reymonde was out of londe; *and* made the Erle *and* meny wende to cassell forto werryn in monestre. He sende also aftyr the meny of deuelyn to come to ham. And As thay come throgh Ossory, *and* lay a-nyght in a place thar thay demyd to be al Sure, Obreen, the kynge of Thomonde, was Sure, *and* awayted hare *comynge By good Spies. He aroose, *with* mych Pepil, vppon Hame, erly a day in the mornynge, *and* Smote vppon ham vnwittyngly, *and* killid iiij^{e}. knyghtis *and* weryn ou*e*r hame, *and* CCCC men. Whan the thythynges herof come to the Erle, he turned agayne to Watyrford *with* mych shame, *and* helde hym ther as man that was besegid, that he came not fro thennes. And for this aduenture, the Pepil of Irland *with* oo herte al-to-giddyr arysen vpon the Englysh, *and* Slowen ham in al places that thay ham myght fynde // The kynge of Connaght come also ou*e*r the shynnyñ into Myth, *and* found al the Castelis waste *and* woyde. he braunt and keste ham doune to grounde, til he come ryght to Deuelyn. The Erle Saw that he was narrow bylad: by consail of his men, as the laste remedy of lyue, he sende his lettres to Reymond, ou*e*r into Walis, in thes wordis: "As rath as

Capitulum xxxiiij^{m}.

aliquid agere viderctur.

[*Fol. 16 a.]

qui aliis praeerant.

unanimiter insurgunt.

in arcto jam positum.

A.D. 1174. Striguil asks Reimund's help, and promises him his sister Basile.

wordes: "As rathe as thou hast I-sey these *lettres*, ne leue nat to come to soco*ur* vs wyth good myght: & thy desyr of basyle, my sustre, lawfully for to spouse, anone at þy comynge, wythout faylle thou shalt haue." Whan Reymond hadde thys I-herd, both for the maydnes loue þ*at* he so longe hadde desyred, & for to pr*o*ue hys stalwardnesse, & socour hys lord yn hys mychele nede, wyth Meyler, hys emes sone, he dyght hym al þ*at* he myght yn such hast, so

[‖Fol. 17 b.] Reimund sails, lands at Wexford,

that he hadde thretty ‖ knyghtes of hys owne kyn, & thre hundert bowmen, the choyse of al Wales: he put hym to saylle, & arryued at Weysford yn fyftene shyppes. That same tyme, the men of Weysford hadden I-p*ur*ueyed ham to vndo al þe englysshe, wher-so me myght ham fynde. Whan thay sawe the shyppes comynge yn þe hauyn, & bane*r*es that thay wel knowe; þroght þ*at* comynge so fersly, that

and brings Striguil safe from Waterford.

trayson was y-lefte; & anoon Reymond went wyth hys men to Wat*er*ford, & broght thens the Erl stalwarthly to Weysford. ffresel, that was keper of Wat*er*ford, went after the Erl by þe wat*er* of Sur, yn botys w*ith* hys men; &, as þay wer yn the watyr, the lydder gyddes that hym shold lode[1], slowe hy[m] & al hys men, & turned ayeyne to the Cyte, & gadered ham to-gedder al þe

The Irish in Waterford slay the English there.

Irysshe-men, & smyt vpon þe englesshe, & slowe al that thay myght fynd yn hous & yn wey, men & wo*mmen*, yonge & old, w*ith*out any sparynge, saue thay that escaped yn-to Rathevyldestour; & throgh ham was the tou*n* I-saued, tyl the traytou*rs* þ*er*-af*ter* come to pees, & eu*er* ther-af*ter* the lasse beleued & loued. Reymond, whan he hadde thys I-se[u]yd the Erl, he miniyed the

Striguil's sister Basilia weds Reimund.

Erl of hys beheste. The Erl sent anoon to dyuelyn aftyr hys suster, and went neu*er* from Weysford, fort sho was w*ith* mych wyr*h*yp*pe* I-spoused to Reymond. Whan he was I-spoused, & al þe day was Ihold yn yoy, gladnesse, & mych plente of mete & drynke, & the nyght aftyr, yn delytes of chambre as ham beste lyked, came tythynges that Oconghour, kynge of Connaght,

King O'Conor destroys all Meath.

hadde I-destrued al myght, & was I-come wyth myche power yn-to the contrey of dyuelyn. Reymond was nat slowe, nether for loue of hys fayr wyf ne for the moche feste, bot anoon a morowe he toke hys men wyth hym, & went toward dyuelyn.

Reimund marches after him.

[1] *for* lede.

ye haue sey thes *lettres*, ne lette not to come to socoure vs *with* good myght: *and* youre desyre of Basyle my Sustre, lawefully forto Spouse, anone at youre comynge, *with*-out fayl ye shall haue" // Whan Reymond hadd this herde, both for the maydes lowe that he so longe had desiryd, *and* forto prow his myght, *and* socoure his lorde in his mychel nede, *with* Meyler, his emys sone, he dight hym al that he myght in such haste, so that he myght haue / *and* hadde xxx^ti. knyghtes of his owyn kyne, *and* CCC bowmen, the coyse of al Walis. he putte hym to sayle, *and* arryued at Weysforde in xv. shippis. that same tyme, þe men of Weysforde hadd Purveyed ham to vndo al the Englysh, wherso thay myght ham fynde. Whan thay Saue the chippis comynge Into hawyn, and baneres that thay wel knew; throw that comynge So Fresly, that trayson was lefte; and anoone Reymonde went wyth his men to watyrforde, *and* broght thens the erle boldely to Weysforde. Fresell, that was keper of watyrforde, wente by the watyr of Sure in botis *with* his men; and, as they were in the watyr, the liddyr gides that hym Sholde lede, slayñe hym *and* al his men, *and* turned agayn to the Cite, *and* gaddrid ham to-geddyr al the Irysh-men, *and* smyte vpon the Englysh-men, *and* slayne al thay that thay myght fynde in hous, in wey, men *and* women, yonge *and* olde, *with*-out any sparynge, Saue thay that Escapid into Rathevyldestoure; *and* throgh ham was the touñe Sawid, tyl the traytorys ther-aftyr come to Pees, *and* euer ther-aftyr the lasse belewid *and* lowid. / Reymond, when he hadd thus I-Sawid the Erle, he mvnyed the Erle of his promes. the erle sende anoone to deuelyn aftyr his suster; *and* Wente neuer frome Weysforde till that she was, *with* myche wyrchipp, Spousid to Reymonde. Whan he was spousid, and al the day was holde in Ioy *and* gladnys, *and* mych Plente of mette and drynke, and the nyght aftyr in delytes of chambyr, as ham beste plesyde / Came tythyngis that o-conghoure, kynge of Connaght, hadd destrued al Myth, *and* was come *with* grete hoste into the contrey of Deuelyn. Reymond was not Slow, nethyr for lowe of his fayre wyffe, ne * for the moche feste; But amorrow He toke His men *With* Hym, *and* Went towarde Deuelyn. O-con-

A.D. 1174.

et desiderium tuum, in Basilia sorore mea tibi legitime copulanda.

de electa Kambriae juventute.

adventum subito.

Fretellus, custos.

ab iniquis Ostmannis.

in plateis et domibus.

revocatam a Dublinia Basiliam,

in thalami deliciis nocte consumpta.

nec vino, nec venere, retardatur.

[*Fol. 16 b.]

A.D. 1174. O'Conor retires. Oconghour hadde þer-to-forne assayed hys mayne, y-douted hym the more; he ne abode nat wyth hym, bot was gladde to take homward. Reymond let restore & arere that was destrued throgh þe werr, & fale castels ryght vp, & broght yn-to rather state; & for dred of hym, the lond wax yn good pees a good whyle, that none Iresshe-man ne durst hym styrre, wer to begynne.

Reimund rebuilds his Castles and restores peace.

[CHAPTER XXXV.]

A.D. 1173-4. Henry II livd in strife. This while the kynge was yn mych stryf, wel two yer, ayeyn hys thre sonnes & har allyes, both yn englande & yn normandy & garioigne; & so was I-peyned *with* trauaylle yn wepne & wakynge nyght & day, that no man ne myght more.

The worst was, that his trusted Body-guard deserted to his rebel sons. Bot, for ne wors fomanne may be, þan thay that man moste trusteth to, o thynge was, that meste tene hym dydde: that þe knyghtes that he hadde I-chose, hys body to kepe, yn whose hondes hys lyf & hys deth he be-taght, for the moste dele eu*e*ry nyght wenten to hys sones pryuely; so that, whan the kynge oft-tymes asked aftyr ham, thay war nat I-founde. Natheles, the bataylle that was of so dotous begynnyge, hadde so good endynge that, for the vnryght that hys sonnes hym dedde so vnk[i]ndely,

But he won all fights, hyt semete bettre tha[t] he soght by power of god, than by erthly power; ffor yn al places, the o*uer*hand was hys. And as hyt semete fyrste that hyt was for wreth of seynth Thomas-es deth that þat vnhape hym ‖ betydde, Also hyt semed þer-aftyr, Whan he hadde I-done asseth to holy chyrche, & pees made wyth the holy martyr, wyth teres & repentau*n*ce of herte, al hys tene, throght goodys help*e*, hym turned to gladnesse: ffor aftyr the mych tene & traysoun þat he hadde Itholled al two yer, at þe laste was þo bataylle I-smyttenn, at the whych, betwen the twey ostes, Ther war the kynges sonnes dyscomfyt, þrogh Rauf de Glanuyl, that was mayst*er* of þe kynges hoste. Ther was I-take þe kynge of scotland, & þe erl of shestre, & þe erl of leycestre, & so fele gret men, bothe of england & of beyent see, that vnnethe me fond pr*i*sons to ham. Ther, aftyr al þe trauayl þat þe kynge hadde, & þe enuy, & þe costes al two yer, come þe sonnes to þe fadyres pees, & maden asseth, falsly, as hyt was þer-aftyr wel Ishewed yn deede. Of þus vntrowth, spake Merlyn yn hys

[‖Fol. 18 a.]

by God's help.

His sons were routed, and

obliged to make peace (a false one).

ghoure had thertofor assayed his meny, *and* douted hym the more. A.D. 1174.
he wolde not abyde hym, but was glade to take homwarde. *et castris*
Reymonde lette restore and arere that was destrued by the werre; *Mediae . . .*
And fale casteles ryght vpe, and broght into radyr state. *and for* *dirutis . . .*
dred of hym, the londe wax in good pees a goode whyle, that none *jam repa-*
Irysh-man ne durst hym not styre, werre to begynne. *ratis et in*
statum
redactis.

[CHAPTER XXXV.] A.D. 1173-4.

This whyle the kynge was in myche stryfe, wel two yere, agayn his Sonnes *and* har allience, both in Englande and in Normandy, *and* gascoygne; *and* So was peyned *with* trawail in wepyn, nyght and day, that no man ne myght more. But, for no wors enemy may none be, than thay that a man trusteth moste to, O thynge was, that most angyr hym didd: that the knyghtes that he hadd chose his body to kepe, in Whos handis his lyfe and his deth he betoke, for the mor Party, euery nyght wentyn to his Sones priuely; So that, whan the kynge ofte-tymys askyd aftyr hame, thay were not founde. Natheles, the battayll that was of So doutos begynnynge, hadd So good Endynge that, for the vnryght that his Sones hym didde so vnkyndely, hit Semyd bettyr that he foght by Powere of god, than by Erthely Powere. For in al Placys, the ouer-hande was his. And as hit Semyd fryst, that hit was for wrethe of Seynte Thomas-es deth that that vnhape hym befell, Also hit semyd ther-aftyr, whan he hadd done asseth to holy churche, *and* pees made *with* the hooly martyr, *with* terys and repentaunce of herte, al his tene (by godys helpe) hym turned to gladnys. For aftyr the mych tene and trayson that he hadd sufferid al two yere, At the laste, was the battayl Smytten, at the whyche, be-twen the two hostys, Ther were the kynges Sonnes dyscomfyte, by Ralfe de Glanvil, that was Maystyr of the kynges hoste. Ther was take the kynge of Scotlande, and the Erle of Chestre, and the Erle of leycestre, and So many grete men, both of England *and* of beyonte See, that vnneth thay found prisonys to ham. Ther, aftyr al the trauail that the kynge hadde, and the Envy, and the costys al two yere, come the Sonnes to the faderis Pees, *and* madyn asseth, falsly, as hit was ther-aftyr wel Shewid in dede. Of this vntrouth, Spake

Capitulum XXXV^m.

illi quoque quos cubicularios sibi milites elegerat.

propitiante nobili martyre Thoma, lacrimis et devotione jam placato.

umbratilique magis quam vera concordia.

Merlin of Celidon's prophecy of the Rebellion of Henry II's sons.

prophecyes, & seyde: "The sonnes shullen agylte ayeyn þe fadyr for hys gyltes, & the rather gylte shal be encheson of þe gyltes þat after shullen comen. The sonnes shullen aryse vpon þe fadyr; & for to awreke hys felonye ayeyne þe wombe, the tharmes shal swer ham togyddeꝛ. In the man of blode, the blode shall aryse, & wanhoply shal hys pynsynge be, tyl that scotland þe penaunce of hys pylgrymage bewepe."

[CHAPTER XXXVI.]

Henry II had grey eyes, a red face,

The kynge henry the otheꝛ, was[1] a maꝑ saunrede, roune heed, & round grey eghen; roghly lokynge, & rede yn wreth; vysage rede bernynge, grete speche, neke somdel logh of þe sholdres, brest thyk, armes staluarthe, of flesshy body; &, more

and a big belly, tho, to lessen it, he'd hardly rest his body. All day he was out hunting, and rode a high trotter;

of kynde than of glotony, grete of wombe; for he was, as to prynce belongeth, [of] mete, & of drynke ful meen & for-berynge[2]; &, for to a-quenche that gretnesse, he put hymself to ful mych trauaylle, that wnneth he lete hys body haue eny reste, ethe ꝑ by day othe ꝑ by nyght; ffor, wynter, & somer, he arose euer more yn the dawnynge, & herd fyrst hys seruyce of holy chyrch; the ꝑ-aftyr, most what al þe day he wold ben out, othe ꝑ wyth houndes othe ꝑ wyth hawkes, for yn thay two thynges he delyted hym swyth mych wythal; & vnnethe he wold ryde any amblynge hors, bot myche trottynge hors, for to trauaylle hys body the more. Aftyr al hys trauaylle a-day, vnnethe he lete hys body haue a lytell reste for to syte to hys mete the whyle that he eete; & anoon aftyr mete,

at night he stood.

& namely aftyr soppeꝛ, anoon he wold aryse & stonde, & so dryue forth al þe meste parte of the nyght, so that al þe court was

When once he'd seen a man, he knew him again.

oft ennyede theꝛ-of. þe man that he ones yn lych beheld, euer eft he hadde knowleche of hym; & dynge þat he hadde ones herd, euer eft he hyt wold vnderstond; þe man that he ones hated, vnnethe he wold euer eft[3] loue; & man that he ones loued, vnneth

[1] vir subrufus, caesius (= lentiginosus), amplo capite et rotundo, oculis glaucis, ad iram torvis, et rubore suffusis, facie ignea, voce quassa, collo ab humeris aliquantulum demisso . . . corpore carnoso, et naturae magis quam gulae vitio, citra tumorem enormem et torporem omnem, moderata quadam immoderantia ventre praeamplo. Gir. Cambr. *Op.* v. 302.

[2] Erat enim cibo potuque modestus ac sobrius; et parcimoniae, quoad principi licuit, per omnia datus. Gir. Cambr. *Op.* v. 302.

[3] MS. eat.

merlynge in his prophesies, and Sayde: "The Sonnes shullyn agylte agayn the Fadyr for his gyltes; and the radyr gylte shall be encheyson of the gyltes that aftyr shullyn come. The Sones shall aryse vpon the fadyr; and forto aw[r]eke his felony agayñe the wombe, the tharmes shal Swere ham to-giddyr. In the man of blode, the blode shal aryse; *and* wanhoply shal his Pynsynge be[1], til that Scotland the Penaunce of his Pylgrimage bewepe.'

et ob scelerís vindictam in ventrem viscera conjurabunt.

[CHAPTER XXXVI.]

Capitulum xxxvj^m^. *Descripcio Henrici regis tercij.* [*Fol. 17 a.]

The kynge henry the othyr, was a man same rede, roune hede, *and* rounde grey eyyn; row lokynge, *and* rede in wreth; Visage rede, brennynge;* grete Speche; neke somdel shorte of the Soldrys, breste thyke, of fleschy Body; ande, more of kynde, than of glotony, gret of wombe; for he was, as to prynce belongyth, of mete *and* of drynke ful meen *and* for-berynge; and forto aquenche that gretnes, he put hym-Selfe to ful mych trauayl, [2] that vnneth he lette his body haue enny reste, othyr by day othyr by nyght. For Wyntyr and Somer, he aros euer-more in the dawnynge, and herde fryst his seruyce of holy church; theraftyr, most part al the day he wolde be out, othyr with houndys or with haukes; for in thay two thyngys he delyted gretly with-al / *and* vnneth he wolde ryde any hamlynge hors, but mych trottynge hors, for to trauail his body the more. Aftyr al his trauayl a-daye, vnneth he lette his body haue a lytil reste forto sitte to his mette. the whyle that he ette, *and* anoone aftyr mette, *and* namely aftyr soper, anoone he wolde arysse *and* stonde[2], and So dryue forth al the moste Parte of the nyght, So that al the courte was ofte wery of his wakynge. the man that he onys in lyche be-helde, euer he hadd knowlege of hym; and thynge that he hadd ones herde, euer aftyr he wolde hit vndyrstonde. the man that he onys hattyd, vnneth he wolde euer aftyr loue; *and* man that he onys lowyd, vnneth he wolde euer aftyr hate. Whan

immoderata corpus vexatione torquebat.

totam statione continua curiam lassare consueverat.

[1] et desperabilis fiet afflictio.—*Op.* v. 301.

[2–2] sibi nec pacem ullam nec requiem indulgebat. Venationi namque trans modestiam deditus, summo diluculo equo cursore transvectus, nunc saltus lustrans, nunc silvas penetrans, nunc montium juga transcendens, dies ducebat inquietos: vespere vero domi receptum, vel ante coenam vel post, rarissime sedentem conspexeris.—*Op.* v. 302.

Henry II described.

he wold e*uer* eft hate. Whan any vnhappes hym befelle, noman meker; efte whan he was yn sekernesse, no man sterner. Suert ayeyn the bold, meke wyth ham that weren vnder y-broght, hard amonge hys owne, & p*ri*uely large amonge vnkouth; & openly mekenesse & debonerte he louede; pryde & hauteynesse he hated, & wold brynge vnder fote.

He lovd meekness, and hated pride.

A.D. 1174-5.

[CHAPTER XXXVII.]

Henry II does not forget his Ireland.

Thegh þe kynge wer wel longe yn grete nuy & grete anguyshe throght hys sonnes, as hyt ys to-fore I-told, natheles, amonge other nedes, he ne foryet nat hys Irland. He lete take the *lett*res that war Imade yn the consaylle of Casshele, of the vnclene lyf & the horyble synnes that the folk of Irland lyueden In, || other-wyse than crysten men oght lyuen; & the *lett*res, al ensealed as thay wer, he sent by hys messagers to the Court of Rome, to the pope Alyxsander that than was; & thar he dydde the p*ur*chace, that by auctoryte of the pope, & by hys concent, was to hym I-gr*a*unted the lordshype of the lond; & þe lond-folke, that crysten shold be, & al clene was out of ryght reule of crystendome & ryght byleue, to bryngen yn-to ryght lawe of holy chyrch, yn the man*er*e of England. That pryuelege forth, wyth another, that rather was p*ur*chaced of þe pope Adrian, that was to-fore Alexander, was I-sent ou*er* yn-to Irlande by Nychole, pryour of Walyngeford, & Wyllyam Aldelines sone; & was a consaylle of al the clergye of Irland I-gaddered to-gyddre at Wat*er*ford: ther wer the pryueleges I-shewed & I-radde solempnelych to-fore ham, & I-gr*a*unted heghlygh by consentement of al the comynes. The forme of thay pr*e*uyleges, as thay wer endyted yn the Court of Rome a latyne, ne myght I nat comly setten yn Englyshe, & þ*er*for I hyt leue; bot the meste streynth ys thys:—Whan the pope Adryan hadde herd opynly the euyle lyf, & þe synfule, that þe folk of Irland ladden, wors than wyld bestes, & out of constytuc*i*ons of holy chyrch & ryght byleue, he gr*a*unted the kynge that he shold ynto Irland wend, for to adresse & sprede þe t*er*mes of holy chyrch, for to wythstond & lete the ruyne of syn, for to Amend the lyther thewes, & sette þe good,

[*Fol. 18 b.]

He gets a grant from the Pope, of the Lordship of Ireland, and a charge to reform the folk to the laws of the Church,

No[ta] teno[rem] bullee [A]drian.

to withstand sin, and better bad doings.

any vnhappis hym be-felle no mane mekyr. Whan he was in sickyrnys, no man sternyr. Smyrte agayn the bolde, meke wyth ham that weryn vndyr-broght; harde amonge his owyn, ande Pryuely large amonge strange men; *and* opynly meknys *and* debonerte he lowyd; Pryde *and* hauteynesse he hatyd, *and* wolde brynge vndyr-fete.

clemens in subactos.

diffusus in extraneos.

[CHAPTER XXXVII.]

A.D. 1174-5.

Thegh the kynge were wel longe in gret angwysche throgh his sonnes, as hit is to-fore tolde, natheles, amonge othyr nedys, he foryate note his Irlande. he take the letteres that ware made in the Consayl of Cassell, of the vnclene lyfe and the horribil Synnys that the Pepil of Irland lyuedyn In / In othyr wyse than crystyn men ought lyue; and the lettres, al Ensealid as thay were, He sende his messagers to the Courte of Rome, to the Pope Alysandyr that than was, *and* thar he did Purchase that, by auctorite of the Pope and by his concent, was to hym grauntyd the lorchippe of the londe, *and* the londe-Pepill that crystyn shold be, and al clene was out of Ryght rule of crystyndome and ryght belewe, to brynge into ryght lawe of holy church, in the maner of England. That pryvylege forth, with an othyr [1] that radyr was Purchasid of the Pope Adriane, that was to-fore Alexandyr, was sende ouer Into Irlande by Nycole, pryoure of Walyngeforde, *and* Willam Aldelines-sone; and was a consayle of al the clergy of Irland y-gadderid to-giddyr at Watyrford. ther wer the pryuylegis y-shewyd, *and* y-radd Sollempnelych to-fore ham, *and* grauntyd hyghlych of al the comynys. The fourme of thay Pryuylegis, as thay wer endyted At Rome a-latyne, y may not comly sette in Englysh, and therfor y * Hit Leue; But the mest streynth is this: Whan the Pope Adryan Hadd Herde opynly the evyl lyfe, and the synfull, that the Pepell of Irland laddyn, wors than wilde bestis, *and* out of constituciones of holy churche *and* ryght be-lewe, he graunted the kynge, that he sholde into Irland wende, forto adresse and sprede the termys of holy church, forto wythstonde *and* lete the ruene of synne [2], forto a-mende the wickid dedis, *and* sette the good; forto En[e]che religion of crystyndome, So that hit were

Capitulum xxxvij^m^.

suae tamen inter agendum Hiberniae non immemor.

ab Alexandro tertio, tunc praesidente, privilegium impetravit.

[1] *quod idem rex ab Adriano... perquisierat.*

in publica audientia ejusdem privilegii, cum universitatis assensu solemnis recitatis facta fuit.

[*Fol. 17 b.] Nota tenorem bulle Adriane.

[2] *et vitiorum plantaria inde extirpanda.*

A.D. 1174–5.

for to eneche relygyoun of crystendome, so that hyt war wyrshyp*e* to god, & helte to the soules; & the folke of þe londe, manshyply hym shold vptake, & worthly as lorde; saue ryghtes of holy chyrche vnwe*m*med; & to seynt petyr & þe holy modyr chyrche of Rome, of euery hous a pany to rent, a yer, yn Irland, as yn England. Thys pryuelege was I-p*ur*chased of þe pope Adryan; & a clerk hyt p*ur*chased, that hette[1] Ihōn of Salusbury; & the pope, by the same clerk, sent to the kynge a gulden rynge, yn name of Seysyne of the lond. the pope Alexandre next aftyr hym confermed that same yift; & eu*e*ry e*þ*er of ham amonested & parted from god almyghty, & betheght þe deuyl al ham that yn any tyme þer-ayeyne wold come.

But every house in Ireland is to pay the Pope 1*d*. a year.

All opponents are to go to the Devil.

A.D. 1174.

[CHAPTER XXXVIII.]

Now again for our Knights' deeds in Ireland.

Hervey of Montmaurice, jealous of Reimund,

Off þe kynge And of hys sonnes, & of the purchace that þe kynge dede, ys Inowe Itold shortlyche: now we wyllen turne ayeyne to ou*r* knyghten gestes yn Irlande. The lond of Irland was yn good pees vnde*r* Reymond-ys kepynge þ bot heruy of Mountynorthly,—that eu*e*r hadde enuy to Reymond, & saw that hys selth & hys wyrshyp*e* wex eu*e*r more & more,—fore he ne durst nat openly showe the felony that was yn hys hert, he bethoght that he wold dernely; he made hym semblant of myche loue; besoght ful yorne þ*at* he most allyaunce haue to har kynrede, & namely, that he moste haue to wyue a gentyl-wo*m*man, Moryces doght*er*, fytz Gereud, that hegh Neste. Thys mayd was hym Ig*r*aunted, & he hyr spoused; & þ*at* þe kynrede sholden the faste*r* be Ibound togydyr, by p*ro*curynge of Reymond & of hym eke, þe Erl yaf helyn, hys sustre, to Wyllyam, Moryces eldest sone: þe erl sent eke aftyr Moryce, that was than Iwent ynto Walys; & at hys comynge, he yaue hym þe haluendele of Ofelan, & þe castel of wykynlo; & þ*at* o*þ*er haluendele he yaue Meyler. In the tyme þ*at* þe pees was, & þe lond yn good state, byfel that Obren, the kynge of Thomon, ayeyne hys trouth & ayeyn the kynges pees, began to wi*th*drawen hym from the kynge, & noght nold be bowynge to hym, ne to ham that wer vnder hym yn þe lond.

marries Nesta Fitz-Gerald.

O'Brien, King of Limerick, rebels.

[1] MS. 'sette' for 'hight, hette, or hete,' p. 94, l. 22 below: 'per Johannem Salesberiensem,' v. 316.

vyrchipp to god, *and* helth to the Sowlys; *and* the Pepil of the londe, manshiply hym sholde vp-take, *and* worthy as lorde; Saue the ryght of holy church vnwemyd; and to seynt Petyr *and* the holy modyr churche of Rome, of euery hous a peny to rent, a yere, in Irland as in Englande. This pryuylege was Purchasyd of the Pope Adrian. / And a clerke hit Purchasid that was callid Ihon of Salysbury; *and* the Pope, by the Same clerke, Sende to the kynge a golde rynge, in tokyn of Seysyn of the londe. And the Pope Alexandyr nexte aftyr hym confermyt that Same yfte; And euery othyr of ham amonessed *and* Partid from god almyghty, *and* betoke the deuyl al ham that in any tyme ther-ayeynnes wolde come.

A.D. 1174-5.

salva beato Petro, et sacro-sanctae Romanae ecclesiae, sicut in Anglia sic et in Hibernia, de singulis domibus annua unius denarii pensione.

[CHAPTER XXXVIII.]

A.D. 1174.

Capitulum xxxviij^m.

OFf the kynge and of his sonnes, and of the Purchas that the kynge did, is y-now tolde Sortelych. Now we will turne agayñe to oure knyghten gestis in Irland // The londe in Irland was in good pees vndyr Reymonde-is kepynge; but heruey of montmorthy,—that euer hadd envy to Reymonde, and Saw that his goodnes and his wyrchippe [wex] euer more and more,—for he ne drust not opynly show the felony that was in his herte, he be-thoght that he wolde Pryuely / he made to hym semblant of mych loue; be-sogh[t] gretly that he sholde alyaunce haue to har kynryde, and namely, that he haue to wyue a gentyl woman, Morices doghtyr, fitz-geraude, that was callid Neste. This mayde was to hym graunted, and he hyr Spoused. and that the kynred sholde be fastyr bounde to-giddyr, by procurynge of Reymonde *and* of hym also, the Erle yaue Ellyn his sustyr, to Willam, Morices Eldyst Sone. the Erle sende also aftyr Moryce, that was than went into walis; and at his comynge, he yaue halfe to hym of Ofelan, and the castel of wickylow; *and* the othyr halfe he yaue to Meyler. In the tyme that the Pees was, and the londe in good state, befel that Obreen, the kynge of Thomonde, agayn his trouth *and* the kynges Pees, began to wyth-drawe hym frome the kynge, *and* wolde not be bowynge to hym, nethyr to ham that wer vndyr hym in the londe.

Videns .. ejusque successus de die in diem amplius prosperari.

Nota matrimonium inter Herueium contrahi *et* Nestam filiam Maurici fitz-geraud.

medium Ophelaniae cantaredum ... cum Wikingelonensi castro.

[Fol. 19 a.]

A.D. 1175.

Reimund marches to Limerick; but is stopt by the Shannon.

His nephew, Davy the Welshman

swims the river aslant;

but as only one knight follows him, he swims back.

Meiler then crosses the Shannon.

Reymond told þer-of myche vnworthynes, & yn lytyl whyle gadered to-dedderes [*so*] hys hoste, so that he hadde an hundert knyghtes & .xx.ti, thre hundret other an hois, & .cccc. bowmen afote, & about al-halwen-tyde went toward lymeryke. Whan thay wer theder I-come, thay hadden grete lette of the grete watyr of þe shynen, that was betwen ham & þe sytè, so that thay myght nat ouer wende: the yonglynges—that wel coueytouse wer ham self to auaunce, her stalwarthnesse to showe, & also wynnynge to gete & to hawe,—weren wel sore a-tened þat thay myght nat ouer to þe syte that was ham so neght, for þe watyr þat was so depe & so streit rennynge betwene, & eke so stony by the ground. As the formest of ham waren houynge vpon þe waterys brynk, was a yonge knyght amonge ham, newly I-dobbet, fayr & stalwa[r]th, Reymondes Neuowe, that hete Dauy the Welsse[1]: throgh grete couetyse that he hadde, ouer al other to wyn the formest pryce, ne dredet nat to do hym-self to so horyble perylle of deth; he smote hys hors with the spores, & ouer-threwe adoun ynto þe watyr, þat was so depe & so stony. the horse was myche & stronge, & come sone vp aboue the watyr wyth hym. he wyssed the hors sydlynge ayeyns the watyr asquynt, & come ouer on the other syde, & cryed to hys men, & seyd that he hadde a ford I-found. bot, for he fond no man þat hym wold felowe, bot o knyght that hete Geffrey Iudas[2], he turned ayeyne by that same wey, & þe knyght with hym. he come ouer hole & sound; bot þe knyght, þrogh þe streyntnesse of þe watyr, was I-throw adoun, he & hys hors, & y-drent to-for ham al. Whan Meyler, that theder was wyth Reymond I-comen, þys saw, he hadde grete enuy that such hardynesse shold be I-teld of any other, & nat to hym: vpon the hors þat hym bar, he put hymself yn the watyr, & hardylyche, wyth-oütten any ferdnesse, passed ouer þe other syde. The cytzeyns sawe hym comynge so al-oon; thay comen ayeyn hym, some for to kepe hym vpward at hys comynge out of þe watyr, for to mak hym turne ayeyne; other, to vndo hym ryght yn the watyr. The knyght was stalwarth, & boldly putte hym vp bytwene twe perylle:—on on halue, þe wode-yernynge

[1] David agnomine Walensis. *Op.* v. 321.

[2] Galfridus Judas. *Ibid.*

Reymonde tolde therof gret vnworthynys, *and* in lytyll whyle gaddrid to-gidderis his hoste, So that he hadd an hundred knyghtes *and* xx^{ti}, thre hundrid o$\mathfrak{p}$er an hors, and CCCC bowmen afoote; and aboute al-halwyn-tyde wentyn toward lymerike. whan thay wer thedyr come, thay hadd gret lette of * the watyr of the Shynnyñ, that Was Betwen Ham and the Cite, So that thay myght not ouer-wende. the yonglynges—that wel couetos were ham-selfe to auaunce, har myght to show, and also wynnynge to gette *and* to haue,—wer sore greuyd that thay myght not ouer to the cite that was ham so nyghe, for the watyr that was to depe, and so Streyte rynnynge betwen, *and* also so stony by the grounde. As the fryste of ham was abydynge vpon the watyres brynke, was a knyght amonge ham newely dobbid, fayre *and* stalwarth, Reymondes Eme, that was callid Dauy the Welsse: throgh gret couetyse that he hadd, ouer al othyr to wyn the formyste price, he dreddit not to do hym-Selfe to so horribill Perel of deth. he smote his hors with the Sporis, *and* ouer-threw adoũne Into the watyr, that was depe *and* ful of stonys. the hors was mych *and* stronge, *and* come Sone vp abow the watyr with hym. he wissed the hors sydlynge ayeynes the watyr asquynt, *and* come ouer on the othyr syde, and cried to his men, *and* seyde that he had a forde founde. but, for he found no man that hym wolde follow, but O knyght that [was] callid Geffrey Iudas, he turned agayn by that Same wey (*and* the knyght come with hym) holde and Sounde; but the knyght, throgh the Strey[t]nys of the watyr, was caste doun, he and his hors, *and* drounde to-for ham all / whan Meyler, that thedyr was with Reymonde come, this Sawe, he hadd gret envy that Such boldnys sholde be tolde of any othyr, and noght of hym: vpon the hors that hym bare, he Put hym-Selfe in the watyr, *and* boldely, wyth-out any ferde, Passid ouer the othyr syde. The Citteseynys Saw hym comynge out of the watyr so al-oone: thay came agayn hym, some forto kepe hym vpward at his comynge out of the watyr, forto make hym turne agayn; othyr, to vndo hym ryght in the watyr. The knyght was stronge, and boldely Putte hym vp be-twen two Pere'is:—on oone halue, the wode rynnynge

A.D. 1175. *circa kalendas Octobris.*

[*Fol. 18 a.]

juventus, tam lucri quam laudis cupida, tanquam ad aquas Tantali posita.

horrendumque mortis periculum laudis amore contemnens.

Cursum itaque fluminis lateraliter obliquans.

militem illum, in redcundo, amnis impetuosi violentia raptum, ad ima submersumque non reduxit.

A.D. 1175. Meiler is stoned and shot at by the Limerick men.

watyr so grysly; on oth*er* halue, hys fomen, that *with* stonys & *with* fawes hym leyden on, both at þe watyr, & vpon the wallys of the toun, þat ryght vpon the watyr stode. He pute hys sheld & hys heed wyth the helme ayeyns the dyntes, & hertely held hym amydde al þat harme, alone, wythout any helpe, ful unseker on al syde: þe

Reimund

crye was ful horyble on eu*er*y halue. And Reymond, that was at þe last of þe hoste, as hede & lodesman & prynce of al þe hoste, herde the crye, & wyst nat yit what hyt was. He come anoon hastyly thrughe al þe hoste, tyl he come to þe watyr; & wh*en* he sawe hys neueu on that oth*er* syde, so narowe byladde, & on al syde besete so narowe, he hadde grete angwysshe yn hys hert; & sharpe &

calls on his troops to

byttyrly bygan to cry to hys felowes: "Me*n* that so stalwarth ben of ryght kynd, & yn so fele Anguysshes w*ith* vs hath you*r* streynth assayed, cometh forth, men! the way ys open to-for vs, & the ford that noon of vs ne couth, throg*h* hardynesse of ou*r* y-found. folow we now the herty knyght, that so stronge ys byladde, & let me hym neu*er* so neyg*h* to-for ou*r* eghen be I-sheat!"

save Meiler.

He and all his host swim the Shannon, and take Limerick.

With that word, Reymond was þe fyrst that put hym yn þe watyr; & al þe hoste aftyr dyde ham yn aduentu*r*, & yn goddys *grace*, & wenten ou*r* al quyte, bot o knyght that hete Guy, & twey fote-men. her fomen flowen[2] to-fore hem ynto the Cytè, & thay braken yn aftyr, & wan the cytè, & slowen ful many of þe cytzeyns, & dreyntten. Thay fonden ther so myche gold & sylue*r* & other

[‖Fol. 19 b.]

rychesshe, that for that, & eke for the maystre ‖ that god ham sent, thay told lytel of the perylle & the lostes that thay hadde ther-to-

Which was the boldest of the three? Davy, Meiler, or Reimund?

fore. Nowe arede ye, whyche was the hardyest of these thre knyghtes? whether he, that wythout any man to-fore hym, put hym yn-to the watyr for to techen al the other the weye; Ath*er* he, that, aftyr ensample of hym, & the horyble death of ham that weren I-dreynt to-fore har eyghen, passed the watyr, & al-one sette so hardyly hys body to mark amonge so many fomen; Other he, that aftyr ham both, so hardyly & so boldly, *with* al the hoste, put hym yn so gret p*er*rylle? Thus was, as the[3] tyme, lymeryk I-wo*n*ne

[1] MS. fawes. Lat. creberrimis lapidum jaculorumque jactibus. *Op.* v. 322.

[2] MS. slowen. Lat. fugatis in urbem hostibus, v. 322.

[3] ? for 'at this.'

watyr so grymly; on the othyr syde, his enemys, that wyth stones *and* with fawis hym leydyn on, both at the watyr, *and* vpon the wallis of the toun, that ryght vpon the watyr stode. he Put his shelde and his hede with the sallet[1], agayn the strokys, *and* hertely helde hym amyd al the Perelis al-one, with-out any helpe, ful vnsure on al sydis / the cry was ful horribill on euery syde. And Reymond, that was at the laste of the hoste, as hede and ledder and prynce of al the hoste, herde the cry, *and* wyst not what hit was. he come anoone hastely throw al the hoste, til he come to the watyr; and whan he Saw his eme on that othyr syde, so narrow besette, he hadd grete angwysche in his herte; and sharpe and bittyr began to cry to his fellouys, "Men, that So bolde ben, of ryght kynde, and in so many angwyschis with vs hath youre streynth proued, come forth, men! they way is oppenyd to-for vs; and the forde that noone of vs knew, throgh boldnys of oure is founde. followe now the herty knyght that so stronge is by-ladde; *and* lette we neuer so ney to-for oure eyyne be shente!" wyth that worde, Reymonde was the fryste that * Put Hym in the Watyr; and al the Hoste aftyr did Ham in aduenture, and in goddys grace, *and* wenten ouer al quyte, (but o knyght, that was callid Guy, *and* two footmen,) [2]her enemys kylledyn to-for hem, into the Cite[3], *and* Slowyn ful many of the Citteseynes, and dreyntyn[2]. Thay foundyn ther so mych golde and Siluyr, and othyr riches, that for that, and also for the Maystry that god ham sende, thay tolde lytel of the Perel and the lostis that thay hadd ther-to-fore. Now ared he, whyche was the boldyst of this thre knyghtes: Whedyr he that, with-out any man to-for hym, put hym in the watyr forto techyn al the othyr the wey; Othyr he that, aftyr Ensampill of hym, and the horribil deth of ham that weryn drovnde to-for har eyyn, Passid the watyr, *and* al-one sette so hardy his body, to marke, amonge so many ennemys; Othyr he that, aftyr ham both, so hardy and so boldely, with al the hoste, Put hym in so grette Peril. Thus was as this tyme lymerike take on

A.D. 1175.

creberrimis lapidum jaculorumque jactibus.

[1] *galeam ictibus clipeumque praetendens.*

acriter exclamavit: Viri, quibus virtutis vigorem insitum norimus a natura, quorumque in tot angustiis animositatis vires experti sumus.

Nota pẽ captionem ciuitatis limeric.

[*Fol. 18 b.]

Eligе, lector, trium virorum audentissimum.

[2–2] fugatis in urbem hostibus, non sine grandi civium strage, muros statim irruperunt; et urbe potiti cum victoria, spoliis plurimum ditati et auro, periculi damna lucri simul et laudis honore compensarunt. v. 322–3.

[3] The English copier of this MS. has jumpt from the first 'Cite' to the second—see lines 21, 22 opposite,—and put 'killedyn' = 'slowen' l. 22 opp. for 'flowen,' l. 21 opp.

A.D. 1175. one a tywesday[1]; Watyrford I-wonne one a tywesdaye, & dyuelyn also: noght for o coste was that day awayted þer-to, bot as hyt byfelle by cas & by adwenture; & nat wythout skyle. ffor the tywesday, by hethen men day yn the old world, was I-sette to a god that day cleped Mars, & was I-hold god of bataylle; & on that day thay fonden, þat whoso bataylle besoght, he shold spede better than yn oþer dayes.

Three Victories on a Tuesday, the day dedicated by heathens to Mars.

[CHAPTER XXXIX.]

Now I wille yowe telle these twey stalwarth knyghtes, Reymond & Meyler, whych thay weren. Reymond was a man brod of body,[2] somdel more than metlyche, yolowe her & sam-crysp, grey eyghen & depe, somdel heyghe nose, neb rody, wel I-hewed, glad semblant & cleer[2]; man of moche methe & of grete purueyaunce; nothynge delycion, nother of mete ne of cloth; heet & cool, al I-lyche, wel he myght suffre; man of mych trauaylle; tholmode yn wreth; as redy he was to serue, to queme ham that he was ouer, as to be I-serued of ham. Whan he hoste ladde, he was so besy about to kepe the host, that oft he left slepe al the nyght, & wandredde about, spyenge & crynge for to look þat noon harme ne shold betyde, & for he wold euer fyrst be redy, yf hyt nede wer. & shortlych to sygge hys thewes & hys maneres, he was man free & meke, queynt & purueynge; & thegh he wer swyth hardy & wel taght yn wepne, of quenyntyse & of sleyght yn syght, & of selth yn bataylle, he passed al other[3]; & thegh he yn both wer myche to preyse, he was better leder of hoste þan knyght.

Reimund Fitz-Gerald was a far-seeing, self-restraind man, watchful at night, liberal, and most skilful in War.

[CHAPTER XL.]

Meyler was a man of durk semblant; blak eghen, & rogh lokynge; sterne semblant; of body, somdel more than methlych; ful stalwarth, wel I-brested, smal mydel[4], armes & other

Meiler lookt dark and stern.

[1] Later note in margin: 'Ther-aftyre hyt was I-socoured one a tywsday.

[2–2] staturaeque paulo plus quam mediocris; capillis flavis et subcrispis, oculis grossis, glaucis et rotundis, naso mediocriter elato, vultu colorato, hilari, ac sereno. *Op.* v. 323.

[3] et quanquam animosus plurimum, et armis instructus, prudentia tamen rebus in martiis et providentia praecellebat. v. 324.

[4] staturae paulo mediocri plus pusillae; corpore tamen pro quantitatis captu pervalido; pectore quadrato, ventreque substricto. v. 324.

a tyvysday, theraftyr hit was socourid on a tywysday, waterford was take on a tyvysday, and deuelyn also. noght for oo Purpos was that day wayted therto, but as hit befell by case and by aduenture, and not with-out skylle. For the tyvysday, by hethyn men tyme in the olde worlde, was sette to a god that is callid Mars, *and* Was holde god of battayle; And on þat day thay fovndyn, that who-so battayl be-soght, he sholde spede bettyr that day than in othyr dayes. A.D. 1175. *nec per industriam haec, sed casu solo contigisse.*

[CHAPTER XXXIX.]

Capitulum xxxix^m^. Descripcio Reymundi Le gras.

NOwe y wille you telle thes two bolde knyghtes, Reymond *and* Meyler, whych they weryn // Reymond was a man brode of body, somdel more than metlych, yolowe here, and samcrysp; grey eyyn and depe, Somdel hegh nose, face rody we[l] hewid, glad, semblante, *and* clere; man of mych mette *and* of grete Purueyaunce / nothynge delycious, nothyr of mete ne of cloth; [1] hette *and* colde, al y-lyke, wel he myght suffyr; man of mych trauail; tholmode in wreth; as redy he was to Serve, to queme ham that he was ouer, as to be ȝeruyd of ham [1]. Whan he hadd host, he was so byssy about to kepe the hoste, that ofte he lefte Slepe al the nyght, *and* Walkid about, Spyenge and crienge forto loke that noone harme ne sholde befall, and for he wolde euer fryst be redy, yf hit nede were. And Sortely to Say his condicionys and his maners, he was man fre and meke, queynt and Purueyynge; *and* thegh he wer Swyth hardy, *and* wel taght in wepyn, of queyntyse and of Sleght in fygh[t], *and* of Selth in battayl, he Passid al othyr; and thegh he in both were mych to Preyse [2], he was bettyr ledder of hoste than knyght. *Vir modestus et providus, nec cibo nec veste delicatus.* *providus et prudens.* [2] *multum quidem militis habens, sed plus ducis.*

[CHAPTER XL.]

Capitulum xl^m^.

MEyler was a man of durke semblant; [3] blake eyyne and rogh lokynge; sterne Semblante; of body, somdel more than metlych, ful bolde, wel brestyde, smale myddyl, armys and othyr [3] *oculis nigris et torvis.*

[1–1] caloris et algoris ei patientia par: vir patiens irae, patiensque laboris. Quibus praesidebat prodesse magis quam praecesse, potiusque minister quam magister videri volens.—*Op.* v. 324. (No Latin here for 'Whan . . . nede were.')

lymmes ful bony, more synowy than fleysly. he was knyht ful
Meiler was never afraid of any enterprise. He'd win or die. But he, and all the knights, robd the Church.
hardy & enuyouse; he was neuer aferde ne agryse to begynne thynge yn fyght that any man oght done hym on, Aþer wyth oþer y-meued[1]. In euery fyght, he was þe fyrst to begynne, & the laste that hyt wold leue. Al þe stalwarthnese that any man myght do, he wold passe, or suffre deth; the maystrye & prys to wynne, oþer deye,—nothynge he ne sette betwene. Of al thynge, bothe these knyghtes weꝛ to preyse myche wyth-al, neꝛ hyt that thay, throgh couetyse, oft byname holy chyrch heꝛ ryghtes; bot more harme ys, & mychel to mourne, that defaute haddeñ meste al ouꝛ knyghtes from the forme begynnynge. What was Robert steuenessoñ & hys sonnes yn haꝛ tyme? what, Moryce fytz Geraud & hys sones? what, Robert debarry, of whom ys to-fore I-told? what, myles de seynt dauy? both Robertes & Moryce neueuen, that with þe formest boldly come ynto Irland? what, Robert fyz henry, Meyleres brotheꝛ? what, Reymond de Cantetone? what, Robert de barry the yonge? what, Reymond Iuessone? what, otheꝛ of the selue gentrye, many & I-nowe, whych hyt waꝛ stronge to namen al by nam? for no mane ne myght hyt bethynk, bot haꝛ stalwarthnesse ne heꝛ good deddes shold neuer wend out of mynd. Thay weꝛ a folke & a kynrede, on two halue, kyndly, stalwarth, & hardy; on other halue, of þe kynde of ffraunce, & theꝛ of wel I-taght yn wepne of myche * nenbre (?) of kynred & kynd stalwarthnesse euer more to heꝛ ende. Whan Reymonde hadde I-wonne the sytè of lymeryke, he ordeyned & purueyed how the cytè myght be best I-kept; he lete brynge thedeꝛ vyttaylle on euery halue grete plente, & lefte þer Myles of seynt dauy, with fyfty knyghtes & squyers an-hors, & CCC bowmen, & with þe other parte of the hoste wyth yoy & gladnesse al harmles turned ayeyne ynto leynestre.

Praises of the Fitz-Stephens, Fitz-Geralds, St. Davids, Fitz-Henrys, Fitzhughs, &c.

The memory of their pluck and grand deeds shall never die out.

[*Fol. 20 a.]

A.D. 1175.

Reimund victuals Limerick, and leaves his cousin, Miles of St. David's, in charge of it.

[CHAPTER XLI.]

Hervey of Montmaurice envies

The lond was þan yn good pees vnder Reymondes kepynge, so that non Iresshe-man ne durst hym stur to mysdom. Heruy of Mommorthy, that euer hadde enuy to hym,

[1] Miles animosus et aemulus; nihil umquam abhorrens, quod aggredi quis vel solus debeat vel comitatus, v. 324.

lymes full bony, more synowy than fleshy. he was knyght ful hardy *and* Enuyouse; he was newyre aferde ne agryse to begynne thynge in fyght that any man ogh don hym on̄, * Althyr wyth othyr ynewyd. In euery fyght, he was the fryst to Begynne, and þe laste hit to leue; al the boldnes that any man myght do, he wolde Passe, or suffyre dethe. The maystry and Prysce to wyn othyr dye, nothynge he ne sette betwen. Of al thynge, both this knyghtes were to Preyse mych wyth-all, nere hit that thay, throgh covetyse, ofte toke holy church ryghtes; but more harme is, *and* gretly to morne, that defaute haddyn meste al our knyghtes frome the fryst begynnynge. / What was Robert Steuenes-sone *and* his Sonnys; What, Robert de barry, of whom is to-for tolde; What, Morice fiz-geraud *and* his sonnes; What, Miles de seynte dauy; both Robert *and* Morices emys, that wyth the fryst boldely come into Irland; what, Robert fiz-henry, Meyler-is brodyr; What, Reymonde de Canteton; What, Robert de barry the yonge; What, Reymond Hues-Sone; What, othyr of the same gentil, many *and* y-now, whych hit were stronge to telle by name? for no man ne myght hit be-thynke, but har boldenys ne her good dedys shold neuer go out of mynde. [1] They wer a pepill and a kynred, on both sydys, be kynde, bolde and hardy; on othyr halue of the kynde of Fraunce, *and* ther-of wel taght in wepyn, of mych nembre, of kynred and kynde bolde, euermore to her ende[1] // Whan Reymonde hadd take the Cite of lymerike[2], he ordeynyd *and* Purueyed how the Cite myght be best kepte: he lette brynge thedyr vytayll, on euery halue, grete Plente; *and* lefte ther Miles of Seynt dauy, with fifty knyghtes *and* Squyerys an hors, and CCC bowmen; *and* wyth the othyr Parte of the hoste, with Ioy *and* gladnys, al harmeles, turned agayn Into leynystre.

Descripcio Melerij.

[*Fol. 19 a.]

inter mortis et murtis triumphos, nihil medium ponens.

Quid alii generositatis ejusdem quam plurimi, quibus insignia singulorum gesta perennem poterant laudis memoriam promereri?

[2] A. D. 1175.

[Chapter XLI.]

Capitulum xlj^m^. *Herreius de Monte Mauricii.*

THe londe was than in good Pees vndyr Reymondys kepynge, So that non Irysh-man durst not styr hym to mysdone. Heruey of Mounmorthy, that euer had Enuy to hym, ne lefte not,

[1–1] O genus! O gens! gemina natura, a Trojanis animositatem, a Gallis armorum usum originaliter trahens.—*Op.* v. 326.

A.D. 1175. Reimund Fitz-Gerald, and sends lies about him to Henry II,

ne left nat, for the allyance that was ham betwene, þat he ne dydde hym al þe harme that he myght, & opynly shewed than þe felony that he longe hadde I-borne yn hys hert. He sent ouer to þe kynge by Messagers, [1]& made hym to vnderstond that Reymond was yn yndygnacion of the kynge; & ayeyne hys owne trouth, so hauteyn I-worth, that he wold al Irland take to hym & to hys[1]; &, for hys lesynges sholl þe bettyr be y-leued, feel þynges he made hym to vndrestond, & so fayr hyt slyked wyth falsnesse, that hyt somet sothe, al that he seyde. The kynge—as ofte manere ys that lydder tales ben bettyr I-leued, & lenger I-thoght, that good—he beleued þe fals mannys talys & wryynge, & sent yn-to Irland four Messagers, that ys to wytten, Robert the power, Osbern of herford, Wyllyam Berynger, & Adam of yarnemouth, of whych the twey shold abyde with the Erle yn Irland, & þe other tweyn shold wende ayeyne ynto England wyth Reymond, as þe kynge hym hadde COMMAWNDET.

which the King believes, and despatches Messengers to bring Reimund back.

Nota de aduentu powerenter in hiberniam.

[CHAPTER XLII.]

Hervey de Montmaurice was as fair without, as he was foul within. He was lecherous, incestuous, envious, treacherous, a coward, a braggart, and a liar.

Heruy was a man fayr & lygne, eyghen grey & depe, ouelyche lokynge, fayr semblaunt, of fayr spech & wordes wel besete; of body more than methlych, of al lymmes ful becomly; bot as fayr & as becomly as he was wytout, as lyddeр & as fals of many maner lastes he was wyt-In; ffor, fro the tyme that he was chyld, he yaf hymself to lecherye; & nat only to many sengle wommen; bot he ne synned neþer spousbrych ne syblynges; he was onful & bakbyter, [2] wreyer, false & traytur, dubłe of tonge & nothyng stydfaste, butt yn [2]falsnesse hys speche thoght as thogh hyt wer hony & mylk out of hys mouthe, bot euer hyt was I-meygnet with attyr at þe ende. Som tym he was stalwarth, as to knyght longeth; bot aftyr, he yaue hym selue more to cowerdyse than to knyghthode; & more he couth hym maken, than he was worth[3]; hegh of berynge yn hous, & noght of plente; of mych speche, & lytel sothnesse.

[1–1] illi sinistre rerum eventum indicarit: asseverans quoque Reimundum, contra regis honorem, et fidem debitam, non tantum Limericum, verum etiam Hiberniam totam, sibi suisque jam occupare proculdubio proposuisse.—*Op.* v. 327.

[2–2] These words are in a different hand. [3] MS. wroth.

for the alyaunce that was ham betwen, that he ne did hym al the harme that he myght, and opynly shewed than the felony that he longe thoght in herte. he sende ouer to the kynge by messangerys, *and* did hym to vndyrstonde, that Reymonde was in indignacion of the kynge; *and* agayn his owyn throuth, so Hauteyn I-worth, that he wolde al Irland take to hym *and* to his. And, for his lesyngys sholde the bettyr be belewid, [1] many lesyngys he made hym to vndyrstonde; and So fayre hit glosyd *with* lesyngis, that hit Semyd trouth, al that he sayde [1]. The kynge,—as ofte maner is, that fals talys ben bettyr belewid, *and* lengyr thoght [2], than good,—he belewid the fals manes talys and accusynge, And Sende Into Irland foure Messagers, that is to wittyn, Robert de Power, Osbern of Herforde, Willam Berynger, And adam of Iarnemouth [3]; of the whych, two sholde abyde *with* the Erle in Irland, *and* the othyr two sholde wende agayn in-to England, *with* reymond, as the kynge hym hadd comandyd.

A.D. 1175.

Et ut hoc figmentum delator regiis auribus tutius et probabilius praesentaret.

[2] *memoria diuturnior.*

Nota de aduentu Powerencium in Hiberniam.

[CHAPTER XLII.]

Capitulum xlij^m^.

Descripcio Heruei.

HEruey was a man fayre and lygne, eyghyn grey and depe [4], lokych lokynge, fayre semblant, of fayre Speche *and* wordys wel besette * of body more than metlych, of al Lymmys wel becomly; But as fayre and as Becomly as he was wyth-out, As wickyd and as fals of many maner lastes he was wyth-In. // Fro the tyme that he was chylde, he yaue hym-Selfe to lechery, *and* not only to many Syngyl Women [5], but he ne synnyd neuer spousebrich ne siblynges; he was onfull *and* bacbyter, wreyer, fals *and* trechoure, doubill of tonge, and nothynge stydfast but in falsnesse; his spech, as hit were honny *and* mylke out of the mouth, but euer hit was medlid *with* wenym at the Ende. Sometym he was bolde, as longyth to a knyght; but aftyr, he yafe hym [more] to cowardyse than to knyght-hode; *and* more he made of hym-Selfe than he was worth; hey of berynge in house, *and* not of plente; of myche speche, *and* lytyl trouth.

[*Fol. 19 b.]

[4] *promi-nentibus aspectu amabili.*

[5] *nec incestus ullos, nec adulteriam vitans. Vir invidus, delator, et duplex; vir submore dolus, facetus, et fallax.*

[1–1] ad votum effectui mancipandum, in Bragmannorum morem conjuratas ad hoc catervas Reimundum asserit composuisse. v. 327.

[3] Robertum Poerium, et Osbertum de Herlotera, Gulielmum de Bendinges, et Adam de Gernemes. v. 328.

[CHAPTER XLIII.]

A. D. 1176.

Reymond hym dyght for to wende ynto England, as the kynge hym commandet; & nothynge abode, bot wynd & wedyr at the see: come Messagers, hastyly I-sent from the meygne of lymeryke, & tolden that Obreen, the kynge of thomond, was belyggynge lymeryke with ful grete hostes; &, for þey hadden all the wytaylle þat Reymond ham lefte & eke that thay haddeñ theꝛ-aftyꝛ I-puchassed yn the wenter-tyme, al I-spendet, me shold ham hastyly send socoure. The Erle was ful anguysshous ham for to socour, & spake þer-of to the meygne, & besoght ham wel yonre (yorne?) theder to go; bot thay war so wroth & so sory for Reymondes wendynge awey, that euerychon, with oo mouth, for-soken alout, that, without Reymond, for nothynge theder thay nold wend. The Erle toke consaylle heꝛ, of the kynges messagers; &, for the thynge was yn grett perryll, at þe end, throgh bysy besechynge of the erle & eke of ham, Reymond turned ayeyne the baneres toward * lymeryke. And as thay come toward Casshel wyth the hoste,—as myght be, syxty knyghtes, & two hundret squyers & thre hundret bowmen, without Iresshe-men that comen eke wyth ham, as Macmorgh of okensely & dofnild of osserye,—me come to ham, & told ham, fore that þay of thomoñ hadde I-lefte þe sege of lymeryke, & wer I-comen ayeyns ham, to kepe ham yn the paas of Casshel; & thegh the paas was stronge yn hymselfe, thay kesten adoun tren, & made dyches thaꝛ towꝛ, & hegges vpoñ, for noon horsmañ ne shold ouer wend. Whan thay wereñ negh to the pas I-comen, Reymond deled the hoste a thre. & downyld, þe kynge of Ossery, that ful mychell hated, & foman was to, ham of thomon, saw þe Englyshe hoste—thegh thay fewe weꝛ—of ful good herte, & wel & semly I-wepned, for thay shold be þe trustyer, & the bettre herte haue to hem, & seyd, "Men, that þys lond wyth stalwarthnesse haue I-wonne, assayleth today styfly youꝛ fomen! ffor yf, ye, as youꝛ won ys, ouercometh, & the maystry haue; ouꝛ sparthes, forth wyth yowr swerdys, ouꝛ fomeñ smertly shulle foloweñ aftyr; & yf ye—that god forbede!—ben ouercome, sykeꝛ be ye that we forth with ouꝛ fomeñ wylleñ turne vpon yowe. Take hede, knygthtes, & vnderstondeth, youꝛ townes & your castels ben welle feꝛ hennes, &

Reimund hears that Donnell O'Brien, King of Limerick, is besieging the English there.

Reimund marches for Limerick, [* Fol. 20 b.]

with McMurrough of Okensely and King Donnell of Ossory.

The men of Thomond barricade the Pass of Cashel against the English.

K. Donnell of Ossory appeals to the Anglo-Irish force to fight bravely.

[CHAPTER XLIII.]

Capitulum xliij^m^.

A.D. 1176.

REymond made hym redy to go into England as the kynge hym commaundid *and* nothynge abode but wynde *and* wedyr at the See. Come messagers hastely sende frome the meny of lymerike, *and* toldyn that Obreen, the kynge of Thomonde, was besegyn lymerike *with* ful grete hostis; and, for thay haddyn al the vytaill that Reymonde *with* ham had lefte, *and* also that thay purchasid sithenys, thay had al spende, And that thay sholde hastely sende ham Socoure. The Erle was ful angwyschous ham for-to socoure *and* Spake therof to the meny *and* besoght ham wel ofte thedyr to go, but thay were so wroth and So sory for Reymondes goynge away, thay euerchōne wyth o woyse forsokyn al, that wyth-out Reymonde for no-thynge thedyr thay wolde goo. / The Erle toke consayl her-of of the kynges messangers, and for the thynge was in gret Perel. at the Ende throw besechynge of the Erle *and* also of ham Reymond turned agayn the baners toward lymerike. And as thay come to-ward cassel *with* the hoste—as myght be, Sixti knyghtys *and* two hundrid Squyeres *and* iij^c^ bowmen, *with*out Irysshmen that comyn also *with* ham, as Macmurgh of O-kensley and dofnyld of Ossery—thay come to ham, *and* tolde ham, [1]fore that thay of Thomon hadd lefte the sege of lymerike, *and* were comyn agaynes ham, to kepe ham in the Paas of Casshel; and thegh the Paas was stronge in hym-Selfe, thay castyn adoun trees, *and* made dichis thartowre, *and* heggys vpon, for noone hors-man ne sholde ouer-wende. When thay wer ney to the Paas y-come, Reymond delid the host a thre. And downyld, the kynge of Ossory, that gretly hatid, *and* enemy was to ham of Tomonde, Saw the Englyssh host (thegh thay few were) of ful good herte, *and* wel semely wepenyd; and for thay sholde be the trustier, and the bettyr herte haue to them; *and* sayde, "Men, that wyth boldnes this londe haue conquerid, assaylyth this day styfly youre enemys! For an ye, as youre wōne is, ouercomyth, and the maystry haue, our Sparrys, forth *with* youre Swerdys, oure enemys smyrtly shull follow aftyr. And yf ye (that god forbede!) ben ouer-come, syckyr be ye [2]that we forth *with* oure enemys wil turne vpon yow. Take hede, knyghtys, and vndyrstondyth, youre * tounys and *your* castelys Ben wel ferre Hennes, and the flyght ful

quoniam omnia alimenta, tam ibi inventa quam attracta, brumali tempore consumpserant. se illuc ituros absque Reimundo omnes unanimiter contradicerent.

[1] *audivit Tuhetmonienses, obsidione relicta, ei in passu Cassiliensi obviam venisse; et locum, natura difficilem, confragis arborum et fossatis plurimum exasperasse; sepem quoque fortissimam ex transverso locasse.*

[2] *in vos cum hostibus proculdubio conversentur.*

[*Fol. 20 a.]

A.D. 1176. the flyght ful longe, & our maner ys, to helpe ham that ben omost, & folowe the fleynge. trysteth wel to vs; bot no lenger than the ouer hand ys your." ¶ Whane thys was yseyd, Meyler, þat was yn the formeste of the host, smertly spronge out, as sparke out of fyr; & al the host aftyr stalwartly com to the pas; & nat wyt-out gret slaght of ham that wythstoden, opened the way, & wentten ouer an estre euen, & a thrydde ester day, that ys to wenttenᵭ, on a tywesday, as at the other tyme. Also nowe, the host come ynto lymeryk, Reymond lete ryght & arer that, throgh the sege of har fomen, was I-wasted & destrued. & nat lange ther-aftyr, he held parlement wyth the kynge of Connaght & the kynge of Thomon, bot yn oo day bot nat yn o place; ffor the kynge of Connaght held hym yn the watyr of the shynen, yn a myche logh, yn botys, & the kynge of Thomon was thar negh yn a wodde. Reymond was betwene two, at kyldalo, as myght by, syxten myle frome lymeryk. Ther was the parlement so fer forth I-dryuen, that euery of ham delyuered to Reymond good hostages, & othes many-fold sworne hold & trewe, yn good pees for to hold euer efte to the kynge & to hys. Whan thys was I-done, & Reymond turned ayeyne wyth hys hostages to lymeryke, þe prynce of desmond, Dermot Maccarthy, sent by messagers to Reymond, & besoght hym that he ayeyne hy[s] eldeste sone that hete Cormoc Olethanᵭ—tha[t] wel negh hym out of hys kyngedome I-putte—hym, as the kynges trew man, shold helpe; & large yiftes he byhete, both to Reymond & the meygne, wyth that that thay wold hym helpe. Reymond, as manᵭ that had nat loth wynnynges, ne hymself to auaunce, spake her-of to hys falawes, & thay alle graunted to donᵭ as he wold, & turned the baners toward the Contreys of Cork. by weyes as thay wenttenᵭ, thay name many prayes, wher-of the meynge was ful wel apayed, & mych ther-of was oft I-sent to lymeryk, so longe, that throgh help of Reymonde, Dermot recouered al hys kyngedome vponᵭ hys sone —of whyche he was negh I-pute owt:—the sone was I-take & delyuered to the fadyr, & he hym pute yn pryssoun, & nat longe ther-aftyre hym be-lete take out of pryssoun, & smyth of hys hede.

Meiler Fitz-Henry leads the attack, and forces the Pass on Easter Eve April 3. They enter Limerick, and repair it.

Reimund, at Killaloe, induces the Irish rebels to swear allegiance to Henry II.

He then agrees to help Dermot Mac-Carthy against his son Cormack.

Reimund marches to Cork, and beats Cormack,

who is put in prison, and then beheaded.

Longe. [1] And oure maner is, to helpe ham that ben omyste, and follow the fleynge. trystyth wel to vs; but no longyr than ye haue the ouer hande" / Whan this was sayde, Meyler, that was in the formyst of the hoste, smyrtly styrte out, as sparke of fyre; and al the host aftyr, boldely come to the Paas; *and* not wyth-out gret slaght of ham that wythstodyn, openyd the way, *and* wentyn ouer an Estre-evyn, and the thyrd Estyr-day, that is to say, on a tyvysday, as at the othyr tyme. also now þe hoste come to lymerik, Reymond lette rere that throw the sege of har enemys was wastid' *and* destrued. *and* not lange ther-aftyr, he helde Parlement wyth the kynge of Connaght *and* the kynge of Thomonde, both in oo day, but not in oo Place; For the kynge of Connaght helde hym in the watyr of shynnyn, in a myche logh, in botis, and the kynge of Thomonde was thar negh in a wodd'. Reymonde was betwen two at kyldalo, as myght by, syxtene mile from lymerik. Ther was the Parlement So fer forth drywen, that euery of ham delyuerid to Reymond good hostagis, *and* othis manyfolde Sworn, holde and trew, in good Pees forto holde euer aftyr to the kynge and to his. Whan this was don, *and* Reymond turned agayn with his hostagis to lymerike, the Prince of Desmonde, Dermot Maccarthy, sende by messagers to Reymonde, and besoght hym that he-agayn his eldyst Sone that hete Cormok Olethan, that wel ney hym out of his kyngdome Putte,—hym, as the kynges trew man, sholde helpe; *and* large yftys he Promysyd, both to Reymond *and* the meny, yf thay wolde hym helpe. Reymond, as man that had no loth wynnynges, ne hym-Selfe to auctorice, Spake herof to his fellowis; and thay al graunted to do as he wolde, and turned the baners toward the contreis of Corke. [2] by weyes as thay wentyn, thay rerid many Prayes, Wherof the meny was ful wel appayed *and* wel arrayed, *and* mych therof was ofte sende to lymerik. So longe, that by the helpe of Reymond, Dermot recoverid al his kyngdome vpon his sone, of whom he was ney Putt out / the Sone was take, and delyuerid to the Fadyr; and he Putt hym in prysone. and not longe ther-aftyr, hym he lette take out of pryson, *and* smyte of his hede.

A. D. 1176.

Nota quod hibernici non sunt amici nisi quandiu forma faciet.

[1] *Et nos victoribus semper adhaerentes, solum persequimur fugientes. De nobis itaque confidite, sed victores.*

fidelitatem Anglorum regi et suis de cetero inviolabiliter exhibendam sacramentis corporaliter praestitis renovaverit.

[2] *Multis itaque tum praedis in brevi quam stipendiis, familia in partibus illis abunde refecta, et alimentorum copia Limericum abinde persarpe transmissa.*

A.D. 1176.

[CHAPTER XLIV.]

[Fol. 21a.] Reimund Fitz-Gerald hears from his wife Basile,

The whyle that Reymond was in this maner yn desmon, come a Messager to hym ffrom Dyuelyn, hastyly I-sent, & broght hym a lettre from basile, hys wyf; bot he that hyt broght, wyst nat what hyt was. Reymond hadde wyth hym a clerk that he wel tryst to; he lete hym rede the lettre priuelych, that thus myche hym seyde: "To hyre leue lord & hyr spouse Reymond, hys basyle sendeth gretynge. as to hyr selue, wyt thou, lef man, that the grete chek-toth that so sore me oke, ys I-falle. Wherfore, yf thou any thynge recheste of thy self, other of me, ne leue nat to come hastyly to me." Whan Reymond thys herd, he vnderstode that the mych toth that hyr was I-falle, betokned þe Erles deth; for he lefte hym ful seke at dyuelyne, whan he parted from hym. And thegh he lange ther-to-fore was ded, for drede of Iresshe-men he was for-hold tyl Reymondes comes, & the meygnees, ynto Leynestre. Reymond turned sone to lymeryke. & þe sorow that was yn hys hert with-yn, he, for al hyt, as myche as he myght, with fayr semblant makynge with-out; & ful fewe men, he shewed the aduentur that so sodeynly was byfalle; & of ham that mooste good kouth, he besoght consaylle & rede, what was ham to done. Than was comenly har rede such: "what fore the erles deth, what for Reymondes wendynge out of the lond, that the sytè of lymeryke, that was so ferr, & amonge so many enemyes, me shold leue voyde; & al the meygne holy led ynto leynestre, þe townes vpon þe see & the castels for to kepe." Reymond, thegh hym loth wer, graunted thys, & stod to har rede; &, for he ne fond none that aftyr hym wold ther abyde, he betoke Obreen, the kynge of thomon, the Cytè to kepe as the kynges baroun, & toke of hym efte newe hostages, & many new othes I-swore, the toun harmles for to kepe, & the pees trewly for to hold. Vpon thys forward, thay wentten al out of the Cytè, & lefte Obren & hys men with-yn; & vnnethes thay war I-passed the brygge, that þe tother end nas I-broken anoon ryght behynd ham, & þe toun, that wel & fast was I-walled, & wel I-byld with good housses I-herberged o wyttaylle that on euery half þether was I-broght well I-stoffe[1], nat without

that her bad tooth is out,

i.e. that Earl Striguil is dead, tho' his death is kept secret.

Reimund's Council advise him to quit Limerick, and take his men to Leinster.

So he commits Limerick to O'Brien, who swears to keep it in peace; but at once breaks his oath, and destroys the Bridge.

[CHAPTER XLIV.]

A.D. 1176.

Capitulum xliiij^m^. nota De morte comitis Richardi.

The whyle that Reymond was in this maner in desmonde, come a Messager to hym frome deuelyn, Hastly sende, and broght hym a lettyr frome basyle, his wyfe; but he that hit broght, wyst not what hit was. Reymond hadd with hym a clerke that he trust wel to. / He mad him rede the lettyr priuely, þat thus mych hym sayde: "To hir welbelowid lorde and Spouse, Reymond, his basylle sendyth gretynge. as to hyre-Selfe, wit thou, lefe man, that the grete chektoth that so sore me grewid, is falle; Werfor, yf ye rekyth any-thynge of youre-Selfe, othyr of me, ne leue not to come hastely to me." When Reymond this herde, he vndyrstod by the mych toth, that * Hyr was fall, Betokenyd the Erlys deth; for He Lefte Hym ful seke at deuelyn when he lefte hym. And thegh he lang therto-for was ded, for fere of Irysh-men, he was for-holde tyl Reymondes comys and the menyes, in-to leynystere. Reymond turned sone to lymerike. and the Sorrow that was in his herte wythin, [1]he, for al hit, as mych as he cowthe, made fayre semblant without[1]; and to ful few men he shewid the aduenture that so sodeynly was byfall; and of ham that moste good couth, he besoght consayl and rede, what was ham to done. Than was comynly har consail Such, "what for the Erlys deth, what for Reymondys[2] wendynge out of the londe, that the Cite of lymerik, that was so ferre, and amonge so many enemys, that they sholde leue woyde; and al the meny, holy lede Into leynystere, the tovnes and the castelys vpon the See forto kepe." Reymond, thegh loth hit was to hym, gravntyd this, and stode to har rede; and, for he ne found none that aftyr hym wolde byde there, He yaue Obreyn, the kynge of Thomonde, the Cite to kepe as the kynges barovne, and toke of hym, fryst, new hostagis, and many new othys Sware, the touñe harmles forto kepe, and the Pees trewely forto hold / Vpon thys, thay wentyn al out of the Cite, and lefte obreen and his men within / and vnnethys thay were Passyd the brige, that the othyr ende nas brokyn anoone ryght behynde ham; and the toun, that wel and faste was wallid, [3]and wel bylid with good houses, I-herbergid of wytalis, that on euery halfe thedyr was broght wel Stuffid, not wythout gret Sorynys of herte,

quod dens ille molaris et magnus, qui tantum mihi doluerat, jam cecidit.

[*Fol. 20 b.]

usque ad Reimundi familiaeque reditum.

[1–1] *exteriore vultus hilaritate valde dissimulans.*

totamque familiam integre.

Duvenaldo Tuhetmoniae principi.

[3] *aedificiis decenter ornatam, alimentis undique congestis plane refertam.*

[2] de[part'ng?] at first written here.

A. D. 1176. O'Brien burns Limerick. Richard Fitz-Gilbert, Earl of Striguil, is buried.

grette sorynesse of hert, thay sawe on four partyes I-sette afyr; & thys the traytour Obren shewed openlych how me shal tryst to Iryshemen trouth. ¶ Reymond, with all the meygne, wentt hym tho to dyuelyn; & the Erles body, that by hys byddynge was I-kept vnburyed, [was buryed] yn the modyr-church of þe Trynyte, to-for the swete rode, by procurynge of sent laurence, that was yn that tyme erchebysshoppe of dyuelyn.

[CHAPTER XLV.]

Henry II's Commissioners go back to him.

Aftyr that þe Erle was dede, the kynges messagers, that weren aftyr Reymond I-come, vpon newe aduenturs toke new consaylle. Thay lefte Reymond keper of Irland, & wentten ham ynto Engeland hastyly to the kynge, & told hym of the erles deth, & the state of the lond. The kynge sent than ynto Irlande, Wyllyam aldelinessesone, procuratour of the lond, with x knyghtes of hys own priue meygne; & with hym, Ihon de Courcy with other x; Robert steuenessone & Myles de Cogan, þat al two yer yn engeland & yn gascoyne nobly hadden with the kynge I-be, come þan ynto Irland with xx^ti knyghtes. Tythynges come to Reymond that thay war arryued; & he anoon-ryght went ayeyns ham with mych gladnesse * & fayr felawshyppe of knyghtes to Weysford. Ther he yeld vp to Wyllyam, as to Seneschal from the kynge I-sent, al the kynges townes, & hys castels, & al the ostages of Irland. Wylliam sawe Reymond wyth so many & so fayr yonglynges bylad, & beheld Meyller & other knyghtes of hys kyn, fayr & rychely y-wepned of o maner vepne, wel thrytty, vpon ful fayr hors, sheldes about har nekkes, & spers yn hand, pleynge to-geddre ynto al the feldes: he turned hym to hys men, & seyd al soft, "Thys pryd shal be pute In, ar hyt be lange, & þese sheldes to-dreued." Ffro that tyme euer aftyr, these & meste al other proc[ur]atours yn Irland, as thoght hyt wer by on oth togeddre I-swore, throgh ond & enuy ne stynt neuer to besech Reymond & Meiller, Robertes sones, & Moryce, & al that kynrede, al þe enuy that þay myght & durst; for þys ys euermore har wayte & har aduentur: euer whan grete nede byfelle yn tyme of wer, thay war lef & derward, & the formeste to I-clepped, & to bataylle, throgh hardynes, formest & fyrst redy; whan non ned was,

Nota the goodnesse of Geraud. Henry II sends Wm. Fitz-Audeline and others to Ireland.

[*Fol. 21 b.] Reimund yields all his towns and hostages. His fine retinue excites Fitz-Audeline's envy,

and he always works against Reimund and the Geraldines.

thay Saw on foure Parties sette afyre. And thus the tray-toure A.D. 1176.
Obreyn shewid opynly how we sholde trust to Iryssh-men trouth // Reymond, *with* al the meny, went to deuelyñ; and the Erlis body that by his byddynge was kepte vnburied [was buried] in þe modyr church of the trynyte, to-for the Swete Rode, by procurynge of Seynt laurance, that was in that tyme Archebyschope of Deuelyn.

corpus comitis quod . . . fuerat reservatum . . . in ecclesia . . . est tumulatum.

[CHAPTER XLV.]

Capitulum xlv^m^.

Aftyr that the Erle was dede, the kynges messangers, that weryn aftyr Reymond come, vpon new aduentures toke new consail. Thay lefte Reymond keper of Irland, *and* thay went into Inglande hastely to the kynge, and tolde hym of the Erle-is deth, *and* the state of the londe // The kynge sende than into Irland, Willam Aldelinys Sone, Procuratoure of the londe, x. knyghtis of his owyn Pryue meny; And *with* hym Ihon de Cursi, *with* othyr x; Robert Steuen-es [sone] *and* Miles de cogan, that al two yere in England and in gascoyn nobely haddyn *with* the kynge be, come than Into Irland *with* xx^ti^. knyghtis. Thythynges come to Reymond that thay ware londid; *and* he anone-ryght went agaynes ham *with* mych gladnys, *and* fayre felochipp of knyghtes, to weysforde. Ther he yaue to Willam, as to Senescal from the kynge sende, al the kynges townes, and his castelis, and al the hostages of Irland. Willam Saw Reymond *with* so many and so fayre yonglynges *Bylad, And Be-Helde Meyler and Othyr Knyghtes of His Kyn, fayre and riche wepenyd of o maner wepyn, wel xxx^ti^, vpon ful fayre hors, sheldys aboute har neckys, *and* sperris in honde, Pleyynge to-gadderes in-to al the feldys. He turned hym to his men, *and* sayde al softe, "This Pryde shal be Put In[1] ar hit be lange, and this sheldys to-dreued." Fro that tyme euer aftyr, *and* thes *and* most al othyr procuratoures in Irland, as thegh hit were by one othe to-giddyr Sworne, throgh hate and envy ne stynte thay neuer to malyngne agaynys Reymond *and* meyler, Robert-es Sonnes *and* Morices, and al the kynred of geraldines, al the envy that thay myght *and* durste; for this is euer-more har abydynge *and* har aduenture: Euer whan grete nede bifel in tyme of werre, thay wer lefe *and* derwarde, *and* the fryst to be callid for bolnys, *and* to battail fryst redy; whan no

Nota the goodnys of Geraldynes.

Nota de adventu Willelmi Addellini filij, et Iohannis de Cursi, in Hiberniam.

[1] *Superbiam hanc, in brevi comprimam, et clipeos istos dispergam.*

[*Fol. 21 a.]

Nota de geraldinis.

Nota causam invidie inter aldelini filium *et* geraldinos.

Semper in armata militia cari.

A. D. 1176. anoon thay wer loth, & I-pute abake; her felowshyp I-left yn yurne to harme. Na the wodde of har gentryce, throgh non enuy ne myght neuer be I-rotet; for euer ham spryngyth new spourges, of whych the myght yn the lond nys nat lytelle. Who beth that kepeth the contreys? the Geraudynes: Who throgh purleth the hostes? the Geraudynes: Who ben that fomen adredeth? pe Geraudines: Who ben that enuy bacbyteth? pe Ger*audines*.

Yet the Geraldines won and kept Ireland.

Had justice been done them, they'd have held the land in peace.

Hade thay I-found prynce yn any tyme, that har stalwarthnesse ham had y-yold, as thay worthy wer, yn good pees & stydfast hadden I-broght the state of Irland. Bot thegh thay nededen neuer so well, thay ne hade bot lytele thanke, other noon; har trauaylle yuel I-yold, & ouerthrow yn har goodnesse, & mysbeleue & bacbyttynge of har stalwarthnesse; & to other, the prynces tryste̊n, wyt whych no staluarthnese was I-founde, ne no power hadde well to done *with*out helpe & socour of ham. And also Aldelinese-sone, at hys comynge ynto Irland, he wente from toun to toun vpon pe see, & progh soght the Cyttes ther plente was of mete & drynke; bot the monteynes, & pe londes *with*-In, nold he neuer come negh. gold & syluyre, whar-of mych plente was yn pe lond, wel hungrylych he gaderede, to helpe-*with* pledynge & pullynge of pees men, & nogh of theues ne of reuers. In that tyme, about myd-heruest, Moryce fyzt-Geraud deyed, nat *with*out gret Sorynesse of al hys, & mych harme & lost to al Irland; ffor he was a man methefull, suttell, & stalwarth: trewer man ne stydfaster man, ne left he non yn Irland. ℂ Wyllyam adelinese-sone ran Moryce sones to harme anon, & ne stynt neuer tyl he hadde I-take of hym pe Castel of Wykelowe wyth falsnesse. of Reymond & Robert steuenesse-sone, he name the londes that thay hadden yn the vale of dyuelyn & yn Ophelayn; & other that hadden londes yn pes, he name thay londes to the kynges behoud, & delyuered ham londes furthyre yn marche, & yn perryll nexth har fomen: al *with* vnryght, & by hys owne wyll; ffor ther ys nothynge so bold ne so kene as ys that man that ys of noght I-come, Whan he ys an-hegh I-broght, & vnkyndely I-sette yn maystry. ℂ Wyllyam was a man mych of body, & of makynge; *good met-yeuer; fre & corteys by semblant; bot al that he dyde any

Fitz-Audeline sought his ease, and oppress the poor, not the thieves.

Maurice Fitz-Gerald dies about Sept. 1. No truer man was left in Ireland.

Fitz-Audeline robs Maurice's sons.

No one is so keen as an upstart set to rule.

[*Fol. 22 a.]

nede was anoon they were hatyd *and* Putte abake, her fellochip left *and* turne to harme. // Na the wodd of har gentryce, throgh non envy ne myght, neu*er* be y-roted, for eu*er* ham spryngyth new Spourgis, of whych the myght in the londe is not lytell. What ben thay that kepyth the contrayes? the Geraudynes. Who throw thurlyth the hostis? the geraudines. Who ben that Enemys dreddyth? the geraudynes. What ben thay that envy bacbityth? the geraudines. Hade thay found prynce in any tyme that har streynth ham wolde yeue, as thay worthy wer to haue / in good pees *and* stydfast thay haddyn broght the state of Irland. But thegh thay eu*er* so wel had done, thay hadd but lytyll change, or noone, for her laboure. But eu*er* thay profited in har goodnys; and mysbeleue and bacbitynge, of hare boldnys. And to othyr the Pryncis trystyn, wyth whych no boldnys was founde, ne Power had wel to do / w*ith*-out helpe and Socoure of ham // And also Aldelines Sonne, at his comynge into Irland, he went from toun to toun vpon the See-syde, *and* throw soght the Citteis ther Plente was of mette and drynke; but the montaynys *and* the londe w*ith*-In, he wolde neu*er* come ney. / golde *and* sylu*er*, wherof mych Plentey was in the lond, wel hungryly he gadderid to-giddyr, w*ith* pledynge and Pullynge of peese men, *and* not of theuys ne of Robers. In þat tyme about Mid-heruest, Morice fiz-geraud deyed, not w*ith*-out grette Sorrow of al his, *and* mych harme and lostes to al Irlande // For he was a man meteful, Suttyl *and* bolde: trewer man, ne stydfastyr man, ne lefte he none in Irlande // Willam Aldelinys sone ran Morices sone to harme, *and* styntid neu*er* til he hadd take of hym the castel of Wickelow wyth falsnes. Of Reymond *and* of Robert Steuenes-sone, he toke the londys that thay hadd in the vale of Deuelyn, *and* in Ophelan; *and* othyr that hadd londis in Pees, he toke thay londys to the kynges be-howe, and delyuerid ham landys furthyr in Marche, *and* in Peril nexte har enemys, al w*ith* vnryght *and* by his owyn will. For ther is nothynge so bolde ne so kene, as is that man that is of noght come, whan he is an-hey broght, *and* vnkyndely sette in Maystry[1] // Willam was a man mych of body *and* of makynge, good mete- * yeu*er*, fre and corteyse By Semblant. But ale that He did any

A.D. 1176.

Nota de geraudynes.

Qui sunt qui penetrant hostis penetralia?

Note the harde adventure of Geraldines.

Nota quo tempore mortuus erat ille Mauricius geraldi filius.

Descripcio Maurici fiz geraud. (*See* p. 76. 7.)

fraudulenter eripuit.

[1] *Asperius nihil est humili, cum surgit in altum.* Claud. Eutrop. i. 181.

[*Fol. 21 b.]

Bad character of William de Fitz-Audeline.

to wyshype al hyt was yn spyinge, felonye, & trecherye; euer he shedde attyr vndyr hony. To-day he wold do the wyrshyp, to-morow he wold the reue & do shendshype; the meke & þe lotles he vndedde, þe sterne & the hawteyn he plessed; softe with wyld men, & hard with pees men; of fayr spech, soft, fals, trecheur; argh & enuyous, dronklewe & lecheour.

A. D. 1177.

[CHAPTER XLVI.]

John de Courci sees Fitz-Audeline's rascality.

Iohan de Courcy saw that al thynge that Willyam dydde was couetise And trecherye, & that he nas nothynge trewe to ham that vndyr hym wer, ne dredlyche to the mysdoynge. he chase hym of the meygne of dyuelyn a few, bot thay wer good & stalwarth & hardy throgh al thynge, so

He gets troops from Dublin; invades Ulster,

that he hadde xxtij knyghtes, fyfty squyers, & fotmen as myght be by ccc, & went hym ynto Vlnester, whare non engeleshe-man I-wepned to-for hym was I-seye. Than was fulfylled a prophecye of Merlyn, that thys seyd: "A whyt knyght, syttynge on a whyt hors, berynge fowles yn hys sheld, shal formest assayll Vlnestre." Thys Ihon was a man ful whyt, & rood þan vpon a whyt hors, & bar yn hys sheld, ernes I-peynted. he went hym throgh Myth & throgh Vryel thre dayes goynge; & the forth day erlych, come to doune without any lete of any foman. Vnwyttynge he come; In he wente. dyuelyn, the kynge, was shorthlych a-fryght of so derne comynge, left the toun & flow; the meygne, that was myssayse & hungry, fond ther mete & drynke Inowe, & pylfre of gold & syluer & clothes, & eke whar-wyth thay war wel arrayed, & har hert wel comforted. Into the toun was than I-come a legat of Rome, that hete Vyuyen, & was y-come out of scotland. Thys legat was youre aboute, pees to make betwene the kynge & Iohn: myche he spake & mych he hym profred, & more he behete, & trewage to beren euery yer to Englyssh-men, by so that he wold the lond leue, & turne ayeyne. Myche he spake ther-of, & mych hym bysoght; bot noght he wold hym hyr, ffor hys thoght was al I-turned, the lond for to wyn, or the lyf to forlese. Donleue saw that he, wyth fayr spech ne fayr beheste, noght ne myght spede; he sent anoon aftyr hys folke, & withyn the viij day he gadered to-gyddyr an hoste of ten thousand men, stalwarth

and takes Down.

King Mac Donlevy flees.

The Pope's Legate, Vivian, tries to get rid of De Courci,

who means to win or die.

to wyrchyppe, al Hit was in Spyinge, felony, and trechery; euer he shed Venym vndyr hony. Tho day he wolde do the wyrchipp; to-morrow he wolde the rew, *and* do shenshipp. the meke and the buxum he vndid; the sterne and hawteyn he Plesyd; Softe *with* wylde men, harde *with* Pees men; of fayre spech, Softe, fals trechoure; feynte *and* Envyous, dronklewe *and* lecherere. Descripcio Willelmi Aldelmi.

[CHAPTER XLVI.] A. D. 1177.

IOhan de Cursy Saw that al thynge that willam did was couetyse and trecherye, and that he was nothynge trew to ham that vndyr hym were, ne dredfull to his enemys. He chose hym of the meny of Deuelyn a few, but thay were good *and* bolde, and hardy throgh al thynge, So that he hadd xxij^ti knyghtis, fyfty Squyeres, *and* footmen as myght be by thre hundrid, and wente hym to vllyster, whar noone Englysh-man wepenyd to-for hym was seyn. Than was fulfillid a prophesy of merlynge, that thus sayd: "a whyte knyght, syttynge on a whyte hors, berrynge fowlis on his shelde, shal formyste assayle vllystere." This Ihon was a man ful whyte, and rode vpon a whyte hors, and bare in his shelde, ernys y-peyntyd. he went throw myth *and* throw Vriel thre dayes goynge; and the fourth day Erlych, come to doune, wythout any lette of any enemy. Vn-wyttynge he come; In he wente. Dunleue, the kynge, was schortlych agaste of so suddeyn comynge, lefte the toun and flow; the mayny, that was myssaysid and hungry, founde ther mette and drynke y-now, and Pylfre of golde and Syluyr *and* clothis, *and* also wher-with thay wer wel arrayed, and her herte wel confortid. In-to the toun was than y-come a legate of Rome that was callid Vyuyen and was come out of scotlonde. this legate was besy about, Pees to make be-twen the kynge *and* Ihon. mych he spake, *and* mych he hym proferid, *and* more he promysyd, *and* trewage to bere euery yere to Englyssh-men, So that he wolde the lond lewe, *and* turne agayn. gretly her-of he spoke *and* be-soght; but noght he wolde hym hyre; For his thoght was al turned, the londe forto wynne, or his lyfe for-sake. Dounleue Saw that he, wyth fayre speche ne fayre promes, nothynge myght spede[1]. he send anoone aftyr his Pepill, and wyth-in viij^e dayes he gaddrid to-giddyr an hoste of x. M[l] Capitulum xlvj^m. argent iij egles dysplayed gules crowned armed *and* beaked golde. *Romanae sedis legatus, multa quidem verba suasoria nec persuasoria proponebat.* [1] *se verbis minime profecturum.*

Mac Donlevy besieges De Courci in Down.

to fyght, & besegete staluarthly the Cyte of doun þer Iohñ was In; for yn thys lond, as yn al other, the northeren meñ ben stordyer & smerter to fyght than other. Iohñ saw thay hostes comynge to hym-ward: thegh he fewe wer, natheles thay war al hardy & stal- warth he chase; & leuer hym was, out wend, & with streynth

De Courci leaves his corner of the town, sallies out,

to assaye the aduenturs of battaylle, than yn the lytel feble fortelet that he yn & herne of the toun yn so lytel whyle hadde arerede, amyd hys fomen, beseged & hungrod, deye. He went hym out to hard fyght: & whan thay hadde fyrste, from ferr, I-suywed har arowes, thay smytten ther aftyre hertelych to-gydder, sper ayeyne

fights splendidly,

sper, swerd ayeyne sparth; & many one the lyf ther forlese. Bot who hadde y-sey Iohnes dynttes with swerd, how he smote of þat man þe heed from the scholderes, that man the arme & þe shuldre from

[*Fol. 22 b.]

þe body, that man the heed I-clouen fer doun * ynto the body, he myght wel sygge that hys myght & hys mayn oght wel be I-preysed.

backt well by Roger le Poer,

Thegh many war yn thys fyght that stalwarthly dydden, natheles, Roger the power, that ther-aftyr was of grete myght yn Osserye & yn the Contrey of leghlyn, was the other that best dydde. Aftyr

and at last wins.

grete fyght & lange, þat ther was of wel vnlych hostes, at þe laste the Iresshe host was ouercome & I-scomfyte; many I-slawe by the see strond whyder-ward they flowen: than was fulfylled a prophecye that Colmkylle seyde of thys fyght: he seyd, 'that so many meñ shold be I-slaw yn that place, that har fomen myght waden to

His men walk up to their knees in Irish blood on the slimy strand

the knees yn her blode.' & so hyt was than; ffor as thay flowen to-for ham yn the slyme, thay folweden aftyr & slowen ham; & as thay dyueden adoun, the blode of ham that wareñ I-slawe, & fleted abouen, toke to þe knee of ham that slowen ham. The same prophete seyd also, 'that a pouere mane, & as thoght he wer flow or banshed out of other landes, with lytel folk shold come ynto doun[1], & the toun wynne, wythout soccoure of any herrer'; & other many fyghtes & aduentures of thynge that yn that contray shold betyde,

[1 ?dyn..]

De Courci has his Victory written in Irish.

whych al openly wer fulfylled yn Iohn de Courcy. That same boke, Ihon hadde an Iresshe I-wrytte, & was hym ther-aftyr as shewer of al hys dedys. In the same boke was eke I-found, that a mañ with folke I-wepned shold, with strenynth, the walles of Waterford to-breken; & with grette slaght of þe cytzeynes, the toun

men, bolde to fyght / and besegyt boldely the Cite of doun ther Ihon was In / For in this lond, as in al othyr, the nordryn men ben sturdier *and* smyrtyr to fyght than othyr. Ihon Saw the hostys comynge to-wardes hym, *and* chose; and lewyr was, out wende, *and* wyth streynth to assay the aduentures of battayl, than in the lytel feble fortelet, that he in *and* herne of the toun in so lytel tyme hadd arrerid, amyd his enemys be be-segid, and to dey *with* hungyr. he went out to hard fight. and when thay had fryste, frome fer shote her arrowys, thay smytten aftyr hertely to-giddyr, spere agaynys spere, Swerde agaynys Spare; *and* many there the lyfe loste. But who had y-sey Ihonys strokys wyth Swerd, how he smote Of that man the hede frome the sholdris, that man the Arme and the shuldyr * frome the body, Hee myght wel Sey, that His myght and His mayn oght Wel to be Praysid. Thegh many wer in this fyght that boldely did, Natheles Rohere le Power, that ther-aftyr was of gret myght in Ossory and in the contrey of leghlyn, was the othyr that best did. Aftyr grete *and* lange fyghtynge of wel vnlych hostis[1], at the last, the Irysh hoste was ouercome *and* scomfited, *and* many slayne by the strondis syde whedyr thay flowe / than was fulfillid a prophesy that colmekyl[2] Sayde of this fyght. He sayde, 'that So many men sholde be slayn in that Place, that har enemys myght wadyn to the knees in her blode' / And so hit was than. For as thay fleddyn to-for ham in the Slyme, thay folwedyn aftyr and kyllid ham; and as thay dyuedyn done, the blode of ham that weryn slayne, *and* fletid abow, toke to the knees of them that ham Slayne. The same Prophet sayde also, 'that a pouere man, and as thegh he were flow or banshed but of othyr landys, *with* lytel folke sholde come to doune, and the toune wynne wyth-out Soccoure of any herrer'; and othyr many fightes and aduentures of thynge that in that contray sholde befalle, whych al opynly wer fulfillid in Ihon de Cursy. That same boke, ther-aftyr had Ihon de Cursy on Irysh writte, *and* was to hym ther-aftyr as merrowre of al his dedys. In þe sayde boke is also fovnde, that a man *with* pepil wepenyd, sholde *with* streynth the wallis of watyrford breke; *and with* grete slaght

quam exili municipio, quod in urbis angulo tenuiter erexerat.

[*Fol. 22 a.]

[1] *nimis impari certamine.*

[2] *Hibernici Kolumbae. Praeglisis namque mollitie, dum ad ima penetraret humana ponderositas, terrae lubricae sanguis profluus superficiem tenens, genua cruraque de focili pertingebat.*

A. D. 1177. St. Columba's prophecies fulfild by De Courci.

wyñ; & fro thennes, by Weysford, wend to dyuelyn *with*out any lette; & þe cytè wyn: & al þis ys found fulfylled of the Erl: he seyd eke 'that the Cytè of lymeryke shold of Englysshe-men shold be twyes I-lefte, & at the thrydde tyme y-hold': & so hyt was, on tyme of Reymond, another of phylep*e* de Bruse, as hyt openlyer shal be I-shewed yn hys own place. Ther-of þe pr*o*phecye was thys y-seyd, 'þe cytè thrise I-soght, at þe thryd tyme shal be I-hold.'

De Courci had Fights 1. and 2. at Down;

Twey grete fyghtes, Iohñ ther ledde & wan at dou*n*; that oon aftyr candelmase, as hyt ys I-told, þ*at* other at mydsomyre, wher he, wyth fewe men, ou*er*come the battaylle of fyftene thousand, & slow of ham

3. at Firlee, where he was beaten;

ful many. The þrydde was at ferly at a pr*ay*-takynge: thar thay come throgh a narowe pas, and hadde so styf fyght, & so stronge, that hys meñ was, some y-slawe, & the o*þer* dele so dyscomfyte ynto al þe woddes, that vnneth ther be-left hym wyth aleueth thousande; & he, as man wonderly stalwarth, w*ith* so fewe wyth hym, whan thay hadde har hors I-loste, thay went a-fote al y-wepned: a xxx^ti^ myl weye thay helden thẽ fyght of har fomẽn; & twey dayes & two nyght thay waꝛ fastynge, tyl thay come to hys

4. at Uriel; 5. at Newry Bridge.

castel. The ferth fyght was yn vryel; ther many of hys weren I-sley, & the o*þer* descomfyte, & put ham to flyght: the fyfte at yueres brygge, as he come wyth fewe men out of England; natheles, ther he ou*er*come, & slowe ful many, & come hol & sond to hys owne. Thus yn thre grete fyghtes he wan the ou*er*-hand; & yn twey, thegh̃ he harme tholled, he dydde hys fomen mych more.

Jn. de Courci described.

Iohn was a m*an* whyte & fayre; of ly*m*mes bony & synowy; mych of body; non hardyer than he, stalwarth, & fyghter stronge of yought; yn eu*ery* fyght the fyrst, & the meste p*er*rylle he wold

[*Fol. 23 a.] He loved fighting, and often attackt his foe in rear.

* eu*er* be In; he was so coueytouse of fyght, & so bernynge whan he hoste lad, & cõme to fyght, that he neu*er* wold hym hold as ledeꝛ, bot w*yth* the fyrst wold yn smyte, som whyle behynd, theꝛ most p*er*rylle was, that oft al the oste was the vnredyeꝛ, and thoght that thay wer ou*er*come, and al hadden forlore: & thegh̃ he weꝛ yn wepne vnmetly stordy, & sterne, out of wepne natheles, he was meke and sobre, & mych wyrshypped god & holy chyrche, & yn al thynge he leuet god and hys s*er*uyce; & al that hym betyd, he thanked god that hym the g*r*ace sent. He spoused Godefreys

of the Citteseynes, the toun wyn: And al this fund fulfillid of the A.D. 1177.
Erle. He sayde also that the Cite of lymerike, of Englysh-men *ab Anglo-*
twyes sholde be lefte, and the thyrde tyme sholde be holde. And *rum gente*
So hit was, on tyme of Reymonde, a-nothyr of Phylip de bruse, *bis dese-*
as hit opynlyer shal be shewid in his owyn Place. Therof the *rendam, et*
prophesy was thus sayde: "The Cite thryse soght, at the thyrde *tertio reti-*
tyme shal be holde," Two grete fyghtis, Ihon ther abode, *and* ham *nendam.*
ouercomyd at doun / that oone aftyr candylmasse, as hit is tolde /
that othyr, aftyr mydsomer, wher he, with few men, did ouercome (June 24.)
the battail o xv. M^l^, *and* Slayne of ham ful many. The thyrd was
at ferly, at a pray takyn: thar thay come throw a narrow Paas, and *in praedae*
had so styfe fyght, that his men was, some slayne, *and* othyr Part so *captione.*
descomfite in-to al the woddys, that vnneth with hym was lefte M^l^;
and he, as man woundyrly bolde, with so few with hym, Whan *Ipse vero,*
thay hadd har hors loste, thay went afoote al wepenyd: xxx^ti^ myle *vir virtutis*
wey thay heldyn the fyght of har ennemys; *and* two dayes and *invictae,*
two nyghtes thay wer fastynge, til thay come to his castel. the *cum tan-*
iiij^e^ fyght was in Vriel, ther many of his were slayn, and the othyr *tilla*
dyscomfite, and Put ham to flyght; the v. fyght at yuores bryge, as *suorum*
he come with few men out of England. natheles, ther he ouercome, *paucitate.*
and slayne ful many, and come hole and Sounde to his owyn. *apud pon-*
Thus in thre grete fyghtis he had the ouer-hande; *and* in two, *tem Ivori.*
thegh he loste the ouer-hand, he did his enemys mych more // Descripcio
Ihon was a man whyte *and* fayre; of lymmes, bony and * Synowy; Iohann[is]
myche of Body; noone Hardier than Hee; Bolde, and fyghter de Curcy.
stronge of youth: in euery fyght the fryst, and the meste peril [*Fol. 22
he wolde euer be In / he was So covetouse of fyght, and So b.]
bernynge whan he hoste ladd, *and* come to fyght, that he hym *vir fortis*
neuer wolde holde as ledere, but with the fryste wolde smyte, *et bellator*
Sumtyme be-hynnde, ther more Peril was, that ofte al the hoste *ab adoles-*
was the vnredyer, and thoght that thay wer ouercome, and al *centia.*
haddyn for-lore. And thegh he were in wepyn vnmetly sturdy *ducem*
and Sterne, Out of wepyn natheles he was meke and sobyr, *and* *eruens, et*
mych vyrchippid god and holy church, and in al thyng he lowid *militem*
god *and* his service; and all that hym befel, he thankyd good that *induens.*
hym the grace sende. He Spousyd Godfredes doghtyr, the kynge *in armis*
immode-
ratus.

A. D. 1177. At last, De Courci overcame all foes.

doghteꝛ, the kynges of Mane; & aftyꝛ many selcouth battaylles that he dydde, nat wythout grete labour & perrylle of lyf & myche myssayse, at the last he was all aboue, & clenlych hadde ouercomen. He casteled the lond yn couenable places, & such pes made, that non better ne myght be, ne stedfaster. Bot gret wonder ys, & nat bot as god hyt wold, that thay fouꝛ grete postès of the conquest of Irland, namely, Robert steuenes-sone, heruy of Mountynorthy, Reymon le Gros, and Iħon de Courcy, mythten neuer haue chyldren of her spoused wyues. Thus mych we haue shortly I-told of Iħon de Courcy; & the other parte of hys stalwarth gestes, we leueth to wryte to otheꝛ that ham wrytte wyllen, & turneth ayeyne theꝛ we afore lefte.

Not one of the 4 great Pillars of the Conquest of Ireland had a child.

[CHAPTER XLVII.]

The Legate Vivian holds a Synod at Dublin, March 13, in Henry II's favour,

Wiuyen, that in-to Irlande was legat I-comen, come to dyuelyn; theder he made hym al the bysshoppes & the clergye of Irland & held hys senne. ther he shewed openly the kynges ryght of Engelond to Irland, & the popes graunt, & hys confyrmacion; &, vp mansynge, forbed lered & lewed, that non neuere so hardy to comen ayeyns the kynges trouth. &, fore the Iresshe-men weꝛ I-woned to doñ al har vytayllys yn chyrches, he yawe the Englysshe-men leue, that whañ me ladde hostes, & myghten nowheꝛ elles wytayll fynd, that yn chyrch war I-found, me shold hardyly out take, & yeue the kepers of the chyrch the worth, as ryght weꝛ.

and gives the English leave to take food from churches.

[CHAPTER XLVIII.]

Miles de Cogan with 500 men, invades Connaught.

Aftyr that, Miles de Cogan, that vnder Aldelinesse-sone was keper & conestable of dyuelyn, wyth fowrty knyghtes, of whych Rolf, Robertes sone, fytz-esteuene, was one, I-sette mayster ouer ham vnder Myles, & two hundret otheꝛ an hors, & thre hundret bowmen, passeden the water of shynnen, & wenttеn ynto Connaght, whaꝛ Englesshe-men was neuere er comen. The men of Connaght wer I-ware of har comes; thay drowen ham ynto erth-hous many; & al the vytaylle that thay ne myght nat take wyth ham, thay put yn chyrches; & tounnes & chyrches thay setten al afyꝛ & branten. & yn despyte of the Englesshe-men, & yn hope þat god shold take wrech of ham, thay toke

The Irish take to earth-houses, and burn their buildings.

of man; *and* aftyr many Selchouth battalys that he did, not wyth-out grete labour*e and* Peril of lyfe *and* mych myssayse, And at the last he was al abow, *and* clenly hadd ouercome. He castelid the londe in behowabyll Placys; and Suche Pes made, that noone bettyr ne myght be, ne stydfastyr. But hit is grete wondyr, and not but as god hit wolde, that thay iiij^{e} grete Postes of the conqueste of Irland, Namely, Robert Steuenes-sone, herucy of Mountmorthy, Reymond le gras / and Ihon de Cursy, myghten neu*er* haue childe of her Spousyd wyues / Thus mych we haue Shortely tolde of Ihon de Curcy; And the othyr Parte of his bolde gestis, we lewyth to write to other*es* that ham write wille, And turnyth agayñe ther we afor*e* lefte.

A.D. 1177.

tandem in arce victoriae plene constitutus.

hi grandes expugnationis Hibernicae postes.

[CHAPTER XLVII.]

Capitulum xlvij^{m}.

convocata Dubliniae episcoporum synodo.

VIuyen, that into Irland was legate, come to deuelyn: thedyr he made come to-for hym al the bischopis and the clergy of Irland, *and* helde his Senne. ther he Shewid opynly the kyngis ryght of England to Irland, and the Popis graunte and his confirmacion; *and*, vpon Payn of Cursynge chargid both lerrid and lewyd, that noone neu*er* so hardy to come agaynys the kyngis trouthe. And, for the Irysh-men wer wonyd to do al har vitalys in churchis, he yaue the Englysh-men leue, that whan thay ladd hostis, *and* myght no vytalis ellys fynde, that that in church were founde, thay sholde hardely out-take, *and* yeue the keper*es* of the church the worthe, as ryght were.

ad ecclesiarum refugia victualia transferrentur.

[CHAPTER XLVIII.]

Capitulum xlviij^{m}.

Aftyr that, Miles de Cogan, that vndyr aldelines-sone was keper and constabil of Deuelyn, with xl. knyghtes, of wych Rolfe, Robert-es sone, fitz-Steuen, was one, y-sette Maystyr ouer ham vndyr Milis, and two C an hors, CCC bowmen, Passyd the watyr of Shynnyñ, *and* went Into Connaght / wher englysh-men was neu*er* therto-forne. The men of connaght wer y-ware of har comynge / [1] thay drew ham into Erthe-hous many; and al þ^{e} wytalis that thay ne myght take with ham, thay Put in churches; *and* touñes *and* churches thay sette afyre and brantyn[1]. and in dyspyte of the englysh-men, *and* in trust that god wold do vengeance on ham, thay

[1–1] *urbibus undique et villis igne proprio combustis; alimentis quoque cunctis, quae hypogeis subterraneis abscondere non potuerant, simul cum ecclesiis igne consumptis.*

A. D. 1177. The English advance to Tuam, but find no food, and retreat safely to Dublin, beating King Roderic of Connaught on the way.

þe rodes crucyfyed, & ymages of halowen̄, & kesten to-for ham ynto al the feldes. The Englesshe meygne wentten tyl thay come to tuen, & ther̄ thay abodde viij dayes yn bare lond & blote. And whan thay myght no mane fynd, ne nothynge wher-by thay myght lyue, thay turned ayeyne to the shynnen. ther thay found ayeyns ham, Oconghour̄ yn a wodde, *wyth* thre grete hostes. the Engelesshe boldly smytten̄ vpon̄ ham, & slowe of ham ful many, passeden on̄, & come to dyuelyn̄ al sound, out-tak þre men̄, that yn that fyght weren̄ I-lefte.

[CHAPTER XLIX.]

Fitz-Audeline goes back to England. He got Jesus's Crosier to Dublin.

Sone ther̄ aftyr̄, Aldelinessone was I-sent aftir̄ ynto Engelonde, that no good yn Irland dydde bot oon, that, by *pro*curynge of hym, an holy baghell & of grete *ver*tue, that me cleped Ih*es*us baghel, was I-broght from Ardmagh̄ to dyuelyn̄, & yet ys at the chyrch of the Trynyte: & come * ynto Irland Hugh̄ de Lacy, heye Seneshal of al the lond, & Rob*er*t de̊ Power̄ *wyth* hym, Conestable of Wat*er*ford. Myles de Cogan̄ & Rob*er*t steuenessoñ wentten also ou*er* the see ynto Engeland; bot thay comen sone ayeyne, & phylep*e* de Bruse *wyth* ham; & hadde the kynge I-yeuen ham thre, al the lond of Desmond. Rob*er*t & Myles hadden the south Contrey, that ys to wytten̄, from lysmore al aboute Corke vii Cantredes, saue the kynge the Cytè of Corke, wyth þe next cantrede. Phylyp*e* de Bruse, the kynge yaf al the Contrey of lymeryke, saue the Cytè & hys next cantred: these thre I-feffed to-gedder̄, come ou*er* ynto Irland yn o felewsh*yppe*, & arryueden at Wat*er*ford, & fro thennes thay wentten̄ to Corke al harmles. Thay war̄ thar̄ fayr̄ receyued of þe Cytteyns, & of a knyght that was keper̄ of the Cytè, that hete Rychard of Londone. Whan̄ thay hadde I-broght to pees Demot Mac charthy, prynce of desmone, & other̄ many of the contrey of moche power, Rob*er*t and myles deled betwen ham the vij cantredes next the Cytè; & felle by lot[1] to Rob*er*t, thre on the eeste syde; Myles, four yn the weste; mo to the on than to the other̄, for the lond was wors; the kepynge of the Cytè comune to ham bothe; the renth & the trywage

[*Fol. 23 b.]

Hugh de Laci and Robert le Poer come to Ireland.

Miles de Cogan and Robert Fitz-Stephen get Cork. Philip de Bruse has Limerick.

They force peace on Dermot Mac-Carthy, and divide the townlands near Cork.

[1] MS. bot.

toke the roodys crucyfied, *and* ymagis of Sayntis, *and* kesten to-for ham into al the feldys. The Englis-men wentyn tyl thay come to tuem, And ther abode viij dayes in bare * Londe ande Blote[1]. And When thay myght no man fynde, ne nothynge Wherby thay myght lyue, thay turned agayn to the Shynnyn. ther thay found agaynys ham / Oconghoure in a wodde, *with* thre grete hostis. The englysh boldely smytten vpon ham, *and* Slow of ham ful many, Passyd ouer, and come to Deuelyn al sounde, out-take thre men that in that fyght weryn lefte. / A. D. 1177.

[1] *in hostili terra.*

[*Fol. 23 a.]

terram alimentis vacuam inveniens. tribus tantum arcariis amissis.

[CHAPTER XLIX.]

SOne theraftyr, aldelines Sone was sende aftyr in-to England, that no good in Irland didde but oone, that, by procurynge of hym, an holy baghel and of grete Vertu, that is callid Iesus[2] baghel, was broght frome Ardmagh to Deuelyn, and yet is at the Trynyte church // And come Into Irland Hugh de lacy, hey Seneschal of al the londe[3], And Robert de Power *with* hym Constable of watyrford, Miles de Cogan *and* Robert S[t]euenes-Sone wentyn ouer the See also in-to England; but thay comyn Sone agayn, and Philip de bruse *with* hame, and the kynge yaue ham thre al the londe of Desmonde. Robert and Miles haddyn the South contrey, that is to Say, from lysmore al aboute Corke, vij candredes, Saue the kynge the Cite of Corke, *with* the nexte candrede; Philip de Bruse the kynge yaue al þe contrey of lymerik, Saue the Cite and his nexte Candrede: thes thre, feffyd to-giddyr, come ouer Into Irland in oo fellochipp, and londyn at Watyrford, and fro thens thay wenten to Corke al harmeles. Thay wer thar fayre rescewyd of the Citteseynys, and of a knyght that was keper of the citte, that was callid Richarde of london. Whan thay hadd broght to pees Dermot Maccarthy, Prince of Desmon, and othyr many of the contrey of mych Powere, Robert and Miles delid betwen ham the vij Candredes nexte the Cite; and fell by lotte to Robert, thre on the Este syde; Miles foure in the weste: mo to the on than to the othyr, for the londe was wors; the kepynge of the Cite comyn to ham both. the rent and the triwage of the othyr

Capitulum xlix^m. *baculum virtuosissimum, quem baculum Jesu vocant.*

[3] *generalem Hiberniae procuratorem.*

Transeuntes igitur in Hiberniam mense Novembri, cum triplici famulitia, tres viri confodati simul et confoederati.

[2] Ihc, MS.

A Cantred is 100 townlands.

of the other four & xx cantredes, as hyt wold falle, euyn to dele betwen ham: & ys a cantrede to sygge, an hundret toñ lond. Whañ thys was I-doñ, thay wentten *wyth* Phelype to lymeryke. Robert Fitz-Stephen, Miles de Cogan, and Philip de Bruse go to Limerick. Robert hadde *wyth* hym xxx^ti knyghtes & lx^ti sweynes; Myles, xx^ti knyghtes & fyfty squyers; Phelype, xx^ti knyghtes & xl^ti squyers; & fotmen *wyth* euery of ham ful many: they came to the Cytè, & noght was betweñ ham bot the watyre of the shynneñ; & Robert & Myles baden Phylepe to wend ouer & assaylle the toun; othyr, yf hym leuer weꝛe, to reꝛ hym a castele vpon the same watyre afor the toun. Phelepe, thegh he knyght wer stalwarth & hardy yn hym selue, natheles, thrógh feble consaylle of ham that *wyth* hym, weꝛ he chase; & mych leuer hym was, leue the Contrey, & harmles turne ayeyne to hys owñ, Than amonge so many fomeñ & so fer londes, yn so grete perrylle to abydde; & that no wonder nas, thegh hym yn thyke vyage mys byfelle, that so many lyddeꝛ men, theues, & manslaghtres of the marche of Wales—& thay to-fore al other—hadde Ꝑchose & I-drawꝰto hys felewshyppe. Noght lange ther-aftyr, Meredus, Robertes sone, yonge knyght & stalwarth, nat *wyth*-out myche wepynge & sorow of many, deyed yn the Cytè of Corke. That whylle, was I-hold at Rome the consaylle of latran, that meñ so moche speketh of, vonder the pope Alyxsandyꝛ the thyrdde. & was wyth-yn thre yeꝛ, thre eclypses of the sone. ¶ Whañ Robert steuenessoñ & Myles of Cogane, wel fyfe yeyr, al desmone yn good pees haddeñ to-gyddyꝛ I-holde, Myles & hys Othome Rauf, Robertes soñ, that a lytyll ther-to-fore hadde hys doghteꝛ I-spoused, wentten to the contrey of lysmor, to hold parlement *wyth* ham of Waterford. & as thay sateñ yn the feldes abydynge aftyr ham, Mactyr, that theder was wyth ham I-come, & wyth whom thay sholdeñ that nyght[1] be I-herbrowed, vnwyttyngly smot vpon ham behynd, & ham both, *wyth* fyue otheꝛ knyghtes, theꝛ slowen wyth sparthes; & otheꝛ fewe that wer wyth ham vnneth escaped. Thrógh that thynge, al the contrey forth theꝛ-aftyꝛ worth so I-storbet, that Demot Maccarthy & al the hegh men of * the contray, forth *wyth* Mactyre, ayeyne har trouth, *wyth*-droweñ ham

The Council of Lateran, March 1179, 3 eclipses in 3 years

Miles de Cogan and his son-in-law go to Lismore,

and are treacherously slain, by Mac Tire.

The Irish [* Fol. 24 a.] then rebel.

Philip ought to attack Limerick, but funks it, and retreats: he has such a set of scamps in his force.

[1] MS. myght.

foure *and* xx^ti candredes, as hit wolde falle, euen to dele be-twen ham // And a Candrede is as myche to Say as, an hundrid toun- londe // Whan this was don, thay wentyn *with* Philip to Lymerike. Robert had wyth hym xxx^ti knyghtes and xl. Squyer*es*; Miles, xx^ti knyghtes, l. Squyer*es*; and Philip, xx. knyghtys *and* xl. Squyer*es*; *and* footmen *with* euery of ham ful many. Thay came to the Cite, and noght was betwen ham but the watyr of the Shynnyn. And Robert and Miles badyn Philip wende ou*er*, and assayle the toun; Othyr, yf hym leu*er* were, to rere hym a castel vpon the same watyr afor the toun. Philip, thegh he was knyght bolde and hardy in hym-Selfe, natheles, [1]throgh febil consail of them that wyth hym, were he chose; *and* myche leu*er* hym was, leue the contrey, *and* harmeles turne agayn to his owyn, Then amonge so many enemys, *and* in so fere londys, in So grete Peril to abyde [1]. and that no wondyr nas, thegh hym in thylke vyage mys-be-felle, that [2] So many wyckyd men, con- dicones *and* manequelleres of the marche of Walis (*and* thay to-for al othir) hadd y-chose and y-draw to his fellochipp. Not longe theraftyr, Meredus, Rober[t]es-sone, yonge * Knyght *and* Bolde, not *with*-out mych wepynge *and* Sorrow of many, Dyed in the Cite of Corke. That tyme, was holde at Rome [3] the consail of latran, that men of mych Spekyth, vndyr the Pope Alysandyr the thyrde. *and* was *with*in iij^e yere, iij^e Eclipsis of the Sonne [4]. Whan Robert Steuenes-Sone and Miles de Cogan, wel v^e yere al Desmond in good pees hadden to-gaddyr holde, Miles, *and* his Sone-in-law, Raufe, Robert-es Sone, that a lytel thertofore to his doghtyr had spousid, wenten to the contrey of lysmore, to holde Parlement *with* ham of watyrforde. and as thay Satyn in the feldys abydynge aftyr ham, Mac- tyre, that thedyr *with* hame was come, *and* *with* whome thay sholde be that nyght logide, Vnwyttyngly Smote vpon ham; and ham both, wyth v. othyr knyghtes, thay Slayn wyth Sparres; *and* othyr few that were *with* ham, vnneth escapid. Throght that thynge, al the contrey was in were, So that Dermot Maccarthy and al the hey men of the Contrey forth *with* Mactyre, agayne har trouth, *with*drowen al frome

Quid est candreda. *tanta terrae portio, quanta centum villas continere solet.*

[1–1] *pusillanimi tamen suorum consilio. potius indemnis ad sua reverti, quam in terra tam hostili tamque remota fortunae tentare pericula praeelegit.* [* Fol. 23 b.]

[2] *viros homicidas, seditiosos ac flagitiosos.*

[3] *sedit Romae.*

[4] *non generales tamen, sed partiales.*

A. D. 1182.

improvisis a tergo securium ictibus sunt interempti.

A. D. 1182. Robert Fitz-Stephen is attackt by Irish rebels. (The North Irish are true, and fight; the South are false, and trick.)

al from the Englysshemen, & turned vpon Robert steuenes-sone, that oft hadde harde happes assayed; & neuer eft, tyl Reymond to hym come, and helpe hym for to wyn the londe & worth to herytage; ffor Robert ne myght nat pees haue, as he rather hadde. As the northren me[n] loueth fyght, also the southren, falsness; thay trusteth to streynth, these to sleghtes; thay to staluarthnesse, these to traysoune. Whan Reymond herd that Robert was so narow byladde yn the toun of Corke, wyth hys fomen al about beseget, he put hym to shyppe yn the hauen of Watyrford, wyth xx^ti knyghtes & squyers, & bowmen, wel ccc; leftene the lond al on the ryght hond, & wentten about by the see, fort he come to Cork, to gaddre hele to hys frendes, & vnhele to hys fomen. Aftyr many & selcouth camplynges, many of har fomen thay slow, & many out of contray thay dryuen, & the moste parte & the beste come to pees; & so the grete tempeste of that weddyr hape, yn lytel whyle was I-queynt & I-stylled.

Reimund Fitz-Gerald sails to Cork to help him.

They put down the rebellion.

A. D. 1182–3.

[CHAPTER L.]

There come to Ireland, Richard de Cogan in 1182; and in 1183, Philip de Barry, and Giraldus Cambrensis, who wrote 3 books on Ireland.

Nat longe ther aftyr, come into Irland Richard de Cogan, Miles brother, wyth fair meygne from the kynge I-sent; & ther-aftyr, yn the begynnyge of Marce, come Phylype de barry, a man sleght & staluarth, wyth moch folk & fayr, both for to help Robert & Reymond, & for to castely hys lond of Olethane, whych Robert hym hadde I-yeue; and yn the same flot come Maystyr Geraud, that phelypees brother & Robertes neueu, ful good clerk, & a man that al the conqueste, & þe state, & þe wondres of Irland, & the kyndes of pepel from the begynnynge, ful Inly soght & oft greped, & thre bokes ther-of maked wyth grete trauayl, fywe yer that he was ther. about that tyme, heruy of Mountnorthy yeldet hym monke at crystes chyrch yn cantyrbery, to whych he hadde thar-to-forne I-yeue hys chyrches of hys lond be Waterford & Weysford. Wold god that he hadde I-chaunget hys culuertnesse and he dydde hys knyghthode, and trecherye as he dydde hys clothynge[1].

Hervey of Mountmaurice turns monk.

[1] Qui utinam sicut habitum, sic et animum, sicut militiam sic et malitiam deposuisset.—Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 352.

the Englysh-men, and turned vpon Robert Steuenes-Sone, that ofte had harde Aduenturis assayed; and neuer efte, til Reymond to hym come *and* helpyd hym forto wyn the londe *and* broght to heritage; For Robert ne myght not pees haue, as he radyr hadd. As the northeryn men lowyth fyght, also the Southeryn, falsnys: [1] thay trustyth to Streynth, thes to sleghtes; thay to boldnys, thes to traysone [1] // When Reymonde herd that Robert was So narrow by-ladde in the toun of corke, wyth his Ennemys al about besegid, he Put hym to shipp in the hawyn of watyrword with xx. knyghtes and Squyeris *and* bow-men wel CCC, leften the londe al on the ryght hande *and* wentyn aboute by the See, fort he come to corke, to grette gladnys to his frendis, *and* Sorrow to his ennemys. Aftyr many *and* selcouth Camplyngys, many of har enemys thay haue Slayne, *and* many out of contray thay dryuen; and the meste Parte *and* the beste come to Pees; and So the grete tempeste of that weddyr hapid, in lytil whyle was broght to an [2] ende. /

A. D. 1182.

donec Reimundus, in hereditatem patruo Stephanidae succedens, urbis custodiam solus obtinuit, [nec tunc plene] pristinam pacem recuperavit.

[CHAPTER L.]

A. D. 1182.

Capitulum l.

NOt longe ther-aftyr, come Into Irland Richard de Cogan, Miles-is brothyr, with fayre maynny frome the kynge y-Sende, and ther-aftyr, in the begynnynge of Marce, come Philip de barry, a man sley and bolde, wyth mych pepill *and* fayre, forto helpe both Robert *and* Reymond, and forto castel his londe of olethane, whych Robert hym hade yeue. And in the same flytte come Maystyr Geraude, that Philippes brodyr and Robert-is Eme, ful good clerke, *and* a man that al the conquest *and* the state and the wondris of Irland, and the kynde of Pepill from the begynnynge, ful Inwardly soght, and thre bokys therof makyd wyth grette trauayll, v. yere that he was ther-aboute // About that tyme, Heruey of Montmorthy yeldyd hym monke at crystes church in cantyr-berry, to whych he had therto-forne yeue his churchis of his lond betwen Watyrforde * And Weysforde. Wolde god that he hadd y-chaunged His culuertnesse as he didd his knyghthode, and his trayson as he didd his clothynge //

A. D. 1183.

et alius Stephanidae nepos Philippique frater, tam avunculum quam fratrem plurimum consilio juvans.

[*Fol. 24 a.]

[1–1] Illa laudis, haec fraudis cupida; illa Martis, haec artis ope confisa; illa viribus nititur, haec versutiis; illa praeliis, haec proditionibus.—*Op.* v. 350.

[2] and, MS.

A. D. 1177. Hugh de Laci castles Leinster and Meath,

The while that this was thus in Desmone I-done, Hugh de Lassy, as man that queynth was & staluarth, both leynester & meth[1] nobely casteled, & yn many places ther other faylled to-for hym; & fayn was about, to setten yn har londes, Thay that wyth streynth & vnryghtly weren out I-dryue, both englysshe & Iresshe; so that, yn lytyll stond, was so good pees that men arreden & tylleden har londes, and the lond ynto al wel I-stored wyth corne. he drogh to hym slegthlych, *wyth* wyrsshype doynge, & stydfaste forward makynge, the heghest of the lond folk; from place to place byled the loud *wyth* castel; & yn lytyll whyll, so good pees made, toke of other, & au*aun*ced hys owne ryuely, & rych ham maked.

and makes such peace that men till their land.

He so attracts the Irish, that he is suspected of aiming to be their King.

The folk of Irland, wyth frenesse & sleghtes, drogh so, & allyed to hym, that men hadden grete ortrow vpon hym, that he, ayeyne the kynge & hys owne trouth, wold make hym self kynge I-crouned of the lond. As thys was, & mych spech yn [ ][2] of thys thynge, comon ynto Irland twey knyghtes from the kynge I-sent,—

A. D. 1181.

John, Constable of Chester, and Richard de Pec arrive. [*Fol. 42 b.]

that oon heet Ihon, the conestabel of chestre, & that other, Ry*chard* of the pek,—for to receyue the kepynge of Irland, & that hugh shold wend ou*er* ynto Englond to the kynge; both har[3] he ou*er* went, by comyn red of ham al, thay arr*er*eden yn that somyr many castells yn leynester; ffor ar that, Myth * was wel castelled, & leynestre bot lytyl. Thar þay rereden a castel to Reymond, yn forthred Onolan; Anothr to Gryffyne hys brothr; the thyrde, yn Omurthy, to Wat*er* de rydlesford a kylka; the ferth, to Iohn the herford, at Tyllagh yn felneth, & other many. Meyller hadde that tyme kyldar of the erles yifte, & the contrey about; bot that me toke of hym for oo coste, & yaf hym þe cont*ray* of leys as yn chaunge. for hyt was smert lond, woddy, & of Marche, & ferr, me sette hym thar as man of marche, that I-nowe couth theron.

Many castles are built.

Meiler Fitz-Henry gets Kildare, but changes it for Leix.

[1] MS. moch.

[2] Space left for a word. A later hand has written something which is illegible. The Latin has only 'fama': see opp. and Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 355.

[3] but ere: Sed antequam.

[CHAPTER LI.]

The Whyle that this was thus dōne in desmond, Hugh de Lacy, as man that sly was *and* bolde, both leynyster and myth nobely he castelid, and in many Places ther othyr falid to-for hym; *and* fayne was aboute to Settyn in har londes, Thay that wyth Streynth *and* vnryght / were out-drywe, both Englysh and Irysh, So that, in lytel whyle, was So good Pees that men Erredyn *and* tilledyn har landys, *and* the lond Into al wel Storid *with* corne. he drew to hym Slyly, *with* wyrchipp doynge and Stidfast forward makynge, the heghest of the lond-Pepyll; *and* frome Place to Place byled the lound *with* castelis; and in lytyll Whyle, so good Pees made, toke of othyr, *and* auaunced his owyn ryuely, *and* ryche ham made. The Pepill of Irland, wyth frenes *and* sleghtes, drow So, *and* allied to hym, that men haddyn grete exstymacion vpon hym, that he, agayn the kynge and his owyn trouth, wolde make hym-Selfe kynge y-crouned of the londe. As this was, *and* mych Spech in taale of thys thynge, comen Into Irland, two knyghtes from the kynge y-sende: that oone was callid Ihōn, the Constabill Of cestre, and that othyr, Richarde of the Peke, forto rescew the kepynge of Irland; and that hugh Sholde wend ouer Into Englande, to the kynge. but ar he ouer wente, by comyn assente of ham all, thay arreredyn in that Somer many castelys in leynyster; For ar that, Mythe was well castelid, and leynyster but lytell. Thar thay reredyn a castell to Reymond in fothred o nolan [1]; Anothyr to gryffyn his brodyr; the thyrde in [2] Omurthy, to water de redelesford at kylka; the iiij^e. to Ihōn the herford, at Tillagh in felmeth, *and* othyr many. Meylere hadd that tyme kyldare of the Erlis yfte, and the contrey about; but that thay toke of hym for oo Purpos, *and* yaue hym the contray of leys in chaunge. for hit was wille londe *and* woddy, *and* of Marche, *and* ferre, thay sette hym there as man of Marche, þat y-now kouth therōn.

Capitulum lj^m. *Hugo vero de Luci, summa solicitudine, victos ab aliis, et violenter a finibus ejectos, ad pacem revocans, eisdem olim deserta tam armentis pascua, quam ruricolis rura restituit. et praenotatae suspicionis fama crebrescente.*

[1 The O'Nolan's barony of Fothurtu, now Forth, in Carlow.] *ex parte regis, tunquam in excambium contulerunt.*

[2] MS to. Lat.: tertium in Omurethi, Gualtero de Ridenesfordia, apud Tristerdermoth; quartum Johanni de Clahulla super aquam Beruae, non procul a Lechlinia: quintum Johanni Herefordensi apud Collacht.—*Op.* v. 355.

[CHAPTER LII.]

A. D. 1181–2.

Whan this was I-doñ, in the somyr Hugh wente owr in-to Engelande. Ayeyne the wyntter the kynge toke of hym sykernesse, & sent hym sone ayeyne kepeṛ of Irland, as he ratheṛ was sette; *wyth* hym a clerk, Robert of slepsbery[1], that shold hym be an help & consaylle, & wytnes of hys deddes. At thys comynge, hugh arered manye castells: On to Meylleṛ at tachmeho, & thañ he yaue hym hys nece to wyue; anotheṛ thaṛ negh, yn Oboy, to Robert de Bygaȝ; & otheṛ many, both yn leynestre & yn Myth, that longe hyt waṛ to namy al by name.

Hugh de Lacy is sent back to rule Ireland; and John of Salisbury with him. He builds Castles.

[CHAPTER LIII.]

About that tyme, befel a wonder aduentuṛ yn a wodde of Myth, of a preste that yede by weyes; & as he come throgh that wodde, come a mañ ayeyns hym, & badde hym, for goddys loue, that he shold wend *wyth* hym for to shryue hys wyf, that lay seke *þer* negh. The preste turned wyth hym; & whañ he come somdel negh, he herd gronynge and wonynge, as thegh hyt weṛ of a womañ; & whañ he come ryght to, thañ was hyt a wolf that lay ther & groned. Þe preste that saw, & was wel sore aferd, & turned hym aweyward: the mañ and the wolf both spake to hym, & bad hym that he ne shold nat be adredde, & that he shold turne to shryue hyṛ. The preste than toke herth to hym, & blessyt hym, & yede sytte besyde hyṛ: & the wolf spake to hym, & shroue to þe preste. & whañ thay hadde þat I-doñ, þe preste bethoght hym, and thoght that thynge that was forshape, & hade gras to spek, that hyt myght also wel haue *grace* & ynsyght of other thynge. he sette to, & asked of the out-comeñ men that ynto the lond weṛ comen, howe hyt shold be of ham. The wolf answard & seyd, that 'for the syñ of þe lond-folke, almyghty gode tok wreche of ham, & sent that folk for to brynge ham yn thraldome; & so thay shold be tyl the same folk waṛ efte encombret whyth[2] syñ; & than thay shold haue power for to done ham the same wrech, foṛ haṛ synnes.'

Nota de lupo confitente.

A priest is askt to shrive a sick woman.

He finds a sick wolf,

who talks to him:

he shrives her.

For the sins of the Irish, God turnd her into a wolf.

[1] I. e. salopsbery, Salisbury.

[2] MS. whych.

[CHAPTER LII.]

Capitulum lij^m^.

A.D. 1181–2.

WHan this was done, In the Some*r* Hug*h* went oue*r* Into England. agayn the Wyntyr, the kynge toke of hym Surte, *and* sende hym Sone agayn kepere of Irland, as he to-for was. Sende *with* hym a clerke, Robert of Slepsbery, that to hym sholde be helpe and consayl, *and* wytnes of his dedis. At this comynge, Hug*h* lette make many castelis. On to Meyler at tachmeho, and than he yaue hym his deth to rescew [!] Anothyr thar ney, in Oboy, to Robert de Bigaz; *and* Othyr many, both in leynystere and in Myth, that longe hit were to reherse ham alby name.

Roberto ... Salopesburiensi

cui et neptem suam tunc dedit uxorem.

[CHAPTER LIII.]

Capitulum liij^m^.

About that tyme, befel a merwelos aduenture in a wodd of Myth, of a Preste that went by weyes. And as he came throw that wodd, came a man agayne*s* hym[1], *and* Prayed hym for the lowe of god, that * He sholde go wyth Hym forto shrywe Hys wyfe, that Lay seke ther-By. The prest turned wyth hym; *and* whan he came Somdel ney, he herde gronynge *and* con-Playnynge, as hit were of a woman; *and* whan he came there wher she lay, than was hit a wolfe, that lay there and gronyd. the prest that Saw, *and* was sore aferde, *and* turnyd hym to goo / the man and the wolfe both spake wyth hym, *and* bade hym that he sholde not be afferde, *and* that he sholde turne to shryw hyre. The Prest toke herte to hym, and blessid hym, *and* wente *and* satte be-syde hyre. And the Wolfe spake to hym, *and* confeste hyr to the preste. *and* whan thay hadd that done, the preste bethoght hym, *and* thoght that thynge that was in myse-lyckenys, And hadd grace to speke, that hit mygh[t] also wel haue grace and Insyght in othyr thynge. He enquerid of the strangere*s* that were come Into londe, how hit sholde be of ham? The wolfe answerid *and* sayde, that 'for the synne of the londe-pepil, almyghty god was displesyd wyth ham, *and* sende that Pepill to brynge ham in thraldome; *and* So thay sholde be, thil the Same Pepill were aftyr encombrid wyth Synne[2]. And then thay sholde haue Power to do to ham the Same Wrechydnys, for har Synnes.'

[See Gir. Camb.'s *Topographia*, ch. 19, *Op.* v. 101: it gives the story, with different details.]

Nota de lupo confitente.

[*Fol. 24 b.]

[1] ecce lupus ad eos accedens. Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 101.

[2] *Sin autem, quia proclivis est cursus ad voluptates, et imitatrix natura vitiorum, ad nostros ex convictu mores forte descenderint, divinum in se quoque procul dubio vindictam provocabunt.*

[CHAPTER LIV.]

A.D. 1180–6. Henry II's sons again rebel.

Nat longe ther-aftyr, þe yonge kynge henry, the old kynge henryes sone, & his brother Geffrey, the Erl of bretaynge, w*yth*-out many hegh men of thys half þe see, and yen half that ham weren an help & consaylle, the thyrde tyme ayeyne hys fader began to aryse; bot sone ther-aftyr, as thegh hyt wer throgh wrech of god, thay bothe deyeden, the on about mydsomyr at Marcelle—& þat was the yonge kynge,—& þe erl sone ther-aftyr deyed eke at parys: and thys þe kynges werr ayeynes his[1] sones was y-endet.

Prince Henry dies, 11 June 1183: Geoffrey dies 19 Aug. 1186.

[CHAPTER LV.]

St. Laurence, Archbp. of Dublin, dies at Eu 14 Nov. 1180, [*Fol. 25 a.]

WNder this, laurence, Erchebisshope of Dyuelyne, (that at the consaylle of the latran hadde I-be, & as me seyde, ther he hadde p*ur*chased ayenys the kynge for loue of hys lond-folke, whar-of the kynge hadde grete ortrow vp-on hym, wher-for he lete hy*m* of hys passage ynto Irland,) the xviij *kalends* of december, deyed at Oye yn normandye; a good mane and holy; & þat, gode almyghty sheweth, by many myracles þ*at* he openly doth for hym. Me *rede eke of hym, that he was seke thre dayes ar he thader come; and whan he sawe our lady-chyrch, that ys the modyr-chyrch of the tou*n*, he seyd thys v*er*s of the psaut*er*, as pr*o*phecye, throgh þe holy goste: 'Hec Requies mea in *seculum seculi*' et *cetera*: & ys thus mych to sygge an-englysshe, 'Thys ys my reste, world wyth-out end; her I wyll wonne, for I hyt haue I-chose.'

after having prophesied his death there.

John Comin is next Archbishop, A.D. 1181. He is consecrated at Velletri, A.D. 1182.

¶ Aftyr hym, was Erchebysshop of dyuelyne, Iho*n* comyn, a man of England borne; & yn England, at euesham, of the clergye of dyuelyn (by queyntyse and pr*o*curme*n*t of the kynge), by on accorde I-chose; & of the pope lucye, at the Cyte of Wellet, ther-aftyr I-hodet & I-sacred; a m*an*, good clerke & ryghtful; & by hys myght, mych ryght laked þe stat of holy chyrch yn Irland.

[CHAPTER LVI.]

Henry II gives Ireland to his son John.

The kynge henry, as he there-to-fore hadde I-thoght, yaue the Lond of Irland to hys yongeste sone, Iohn by name; & whan he hyt hadde hym I-yeue,

[1] *overlined later.*

[CHAPTER LIV.]

NOt longe ther-aftyr, the yonge kynge henry, the olde kynge henryes Sone, and his brodyr Geffery, the Erle of brytayne, *with* othyr many hey men of this halfe the see, *and* yen half that ham weryn an helpe and consayl, the thyrde tyme agayn his fadyr be-gan to arryse; but Sone ther-aftyr, as hit were throgh Sentence of god, thay both died, the one aboute Midsomyre at Marcelle, *and* that was the yonge kynge; *and* the Erle Sone ther-aftyr diede also at Paris: *and* thus the kynges werre agaynes his Sonnes was Endyd. Capitulum liiij^m^. A.D. 1180–6. *praepotentes Pictaviae proceres, cum electa Gallicae militiae juventute.*

[CHAPTER LV.]

VNdyr this laurance, Archebischope of Deuelyn, (that at the consail of the Latran hadd I-be, *and* as thay Sayde, ther he had Purchasid agaynes the kynge for loue of his londe-Pepill, wharof the kynge had grette artrow vpon hym, Wherfor he lette hym of his passage in-to Irland,) the xviij *kalends* of Decembyr died at Oye in Normandy, a good man and holy, and that god almyghty Shewid many Miraclis for / that he opynly doth for hym. We rede also of hym, that he was seke iij^e^ dayes ar he thadyr came; and whan he Saw our Ladyes churche, that is the modyr churche of the toun, he sayde this vers of the Sawter, as prophesy throw the holy goste: "Hec requies mea in *seculum seculi*: Hic habitabo [1], quoniam elegi eam." And is thus mych to Say in Englysh, "This is my reste, worlde wythout Ende. Her y wyl dwele, for y hit haue chose" // Aftyr hym, was Archebischope of Deuelyn, Ihon Comyn, a man of England borne; and in England, at euesham, of the clergi of deuelyn (by queyntyse *and* procurment of the kynge), by oone acorde chose; and of the Pope Lucie, at the Cite of wellet, ther-aftyr y-hodet *and* y-Sacrid; a man, god clerke, and ryghtful, and by his myght / mych ryght lakyd the state of holy churche In Irland [2]. Capitulum lvj^m^. 14 Nov. 1180. A. D. 1181. [2] *ecclesiae Hibernicae statum egregie sublimasset.*

[CHAPTER LVI.]

THe kynge Henry, as he there-tofor hadd thoght, yaue the londe of Irland to his yongest Sone, Ihon by Name. And whan he hit hadde hym yeue, he Sende the Arche- [Fol. 25 a.]

[1] habitobo, MS.

A. D. 1184. Archbp. Comin is sent to Ireland; Hugh de Lacy is recald, and Philip of Worcester takes his place. He took tallage of all, and curses with it.

he sent þe Erchebysshope of dyuelyn ouer þe see, to ordeyn ayeyne hys sones comynge. & sone aftyr þat, hugh̄ de lassy was I-sent aftyr ynto Englond; and come ynto Irland, Phelype of Wyrcestre, procurato[ur] of þe lond, wyth fourty knyghtes; a man that was good knyght, curteys, & good mete-yeuer; bot oþer good ne dydde he noon̄, saue þat he went from contray to contray, & asked, & wyth streynth toke, both of letred & of lewed, þe cursed tallages of gold & of syluer. & I wnderstond that he neuer good dydde þerwyth; ne neuer mane shalle, that so catell gadereth; for many crystes curs, & trew mannys & womannes, pouer & ryche, thay gadereth eke þer-wyth: & wel vnsyker may man̄ be, to do hys lyf yn aduentur̄ wyth ham that catel so wynnethe.

[CHAPTER LVII.]

The fyrst comynge of kynge Iohn̄ ynto Irland. He lands at Waterford 25 April, 1185.

Whan the kynges sone hadde arayed al dynge that nede was, for to come yn-to Irland, he put hym to saylle at Melyford, a ferth estre day. he hadde good wynd, & a-morow arryued at Waterford, wyth thre hun-dret knyghtys, & other an-hors, & a-fote ful many. he arryued, the yer̄ of hys old .xxij.; of hys faderes comynge ynto Irland .xiij.; of the Erles comynge .xiiij.; of Robertes comynge, fytz-steuen .xv.; the yeer̄ of ow̄r lordes Incarnacion .M. C. lxxxv. Steuenes-sone was forman, & opened the wey to þe Erl; the Erl to þe kynge; the kynge to hys sone; & mych hyt ys to preyse, & grete thynge he began, that fyrste ynto Irland so boldly come, the thynge to begyn. Moch also to preysene, he, that aftyr̄ the begynnynge, so nobely come for to eche thynge that was begon; & most of al to preysen, he that al thynge fulle endet, & the lordshype clenlych wan ouer al other[Hy. II]. Her̄, men mowen well vndrestond, that the Englesshy-men̄ ne came nat wyth so mych vnryght yn-to Irland as many folk weneth; for Robert, steuenes-sone, & þe Erl, wyth good ryght come to Macmorgh̄ ynto leynester; the on, hys trouth for to hold, & hym for to helpe; that other, for loue of hys doghtre; nathles, of Waterford, ne of Myth, ne of Desmon̄, whych the Erl at the begynnynge name to hym, & conquered out of leynestre, ne sey I noght that he hadde al fully ryght ther-to. Bot of the fyft

Those who conquer the land before him deserve all praise.

Nota the kyng his tytyle to Irland.

Fitz-Stephen and Striguil had good right to come to Ireland.

bischope of Deuelyn ouer the see, to ordeyn agayñ his comynge. A. D. 1184.
And Sone aftyr that, hugh de Lacy was Sende[1] into England; And
come Into Irland, Philipp of Wircestre, procuratour of the londe, [Philip, in his expedition to Armagh,]
with fourty knyghtes; a man that was good knyght / curteys, and
goode mete-yeuer; but othyr good ne did he noone; Saue that he
went from contray to contray, and askyd, and wyth streynth toke, *a clero sacro auri tributum execrabile tum exigens quam extorquens.* —*Op.* v. 360.
both of lerid *and* lewid, the cursid tollagis of golde and Syluer.
And I vndyrstonde that he neuer good did ther-with; ne neuer man
shall, that So good gadderid; for many crystis curs, *and* trew manys
and womannys, Pouer and rych, thay gadderid also ther-wyth: and
wel vnsure may a man to be, to do his lyfe in aduenture wyth them
that So goode doth gette.

[CHAPTER LVII.]

Capitulum lvij^m.

Whan the kynges Sone hadd arrayed al thynge that nede was forto come Into Irland, he Putt hym
to Sayl at Milleford the iiij^e day aftyr Estyr. He had good wynde, The fryst comyng of kynge Ihoñ Into Irlande.
and amorrow londid at Watyrforde, wyth CCC knyghtes, *and* othyr
an-hors and a-foote ful many. he londyd, the yere of his age xxij,
Of his faderis comynge Into Irlande xiij, Of the Erlis comynge
xiiij, of Roberes comynge fitz Steuyñ xv, the yere of Oure lordys
Incarnacioñ M^l. Clxxxv. Steuenes Sone was the fryst man, And [*Op.* v. 382]
oppenyd the wey to the Erle: the Erle to the kynge; the kynge to
his Sone; and gretly he is to Preyse, and grete thynge he began, that *Multum ergo contulit qui ausu nobili principium dedit.*
fryst in-to Irland So boldely come, the thynge to begyn; gretly also
he is to Preyse, that, aftyr the begynnynge, so nobely come forto
execute the thynge that was begon; And moste of al he is to
Preyse, that al thynge full Endyd, *and* the lorchip clenly conquesyd
ouer al othyr // Here men mowen wel vndyrstond, that the Eng- Nota the kyngys titil to Irlande.
lysh-men came not wyth so mych vnryght into Irland as many
pepill wenyth. For Robert Steuenes-Sone *and* the Erle come to
Macmurgh into leynystre; that oon, on his throuth forto holde, and
hym forto helpe, / that othyr, for loue of his doghtyr. Natheles, of
Watyrford, ne of Mythe, nethyr of Desmon, wych the Erle at the
begynnynge toke to hym *and* conquerid out of leynystre, I Sey not [2] *quintae portionis insulae.*
that he hadd ful ryght therto. But of the fryst Parte of the londe [2]

[1] Sende aftyr, MS.

Henry II's fivefold right to Ireland:

1. All the Irish Princes yielded to him. [*Fol. 25 b.]

2. The Pope of Rome granted Ireland to him.

3. Gurguntius won Ireland.

4. Arthur had truage from Ireland.

5. The Irish came from Bayonne, subject to England.

English kings are, of right, Lords of Ireland.

Nota that Iresshemen bene false of kynd.

parte of the lond that was the Erles throgh hys wyf, The lordshype clenly þe erl yaf the kynge; & al þe prynces of the lond ther-aftyr, by har good wyll, yolden ham to the kynge, to be euermor sugget to hym & to hys. Vp*-on al thys, þe pope of Rome, that ys heede of al crystendome, and that hath a specyall ryght of al the Ilondes of crystendome as wyde as the world ys, he yaf plenerly, and confermed to the kynge, the lordshyp of the lond, as hyt ys to-fore I-told. and of eldre ryght we fyndeth eke I-wrytte, that the kynges of England haue to Irland of Germon, Belynes sone, kynge of Brytaygne, that ys nowe Englond, he come ynto Irland, & whan the lond; & many yer me bar hym truage, and other aftyr hym, ynto brytaygne. Ther-aftyr the kynge Arthur hadde truage eke out of Irland; & Gylmory the kynge, that than was wyth other kynge of the Ilondes, was *wyth* hym at the grete feste that he held at karlyon. On other halue, the folk of Irland come formeste out of bastles & out of Bayon, that longeth now to gascoyne, wherof the kynges of england ben lordes. And thys me may wel vnderstond, that both by old ryght & by newe, the kynges of Englond owen wel to haue the lordshyp of Irland. And thegh the folk of the lond neuer ne hadde be subyet ther-byfore, hyt ogh be I-noght, þat thay al by good wylle yold ham to kynge henry, by othes & by ostages, & al sykernesse that hymself lyked; & þe popes that þer-aftyr hym *grau*nted & confermed the lordshyp of the lond, & accorsed al ham that yn any tyme thar-ayeyn come. And thegh thay, throgh kynd falsnesse & vnstablenesse that yn ham ys, lytyl tel of othes & of mansynge, natheles, thay wer neuer, throgh no man that power hadde, ther-of assoylled ne vnbound. Bot man may bynd hymself *wyth* such thynge, bot nat so lyghly vnbynd.

[CHAPTER LVIII.]

Giraldus says no more of the Conquest, but explains why it was never completed.

Maystir Geraud ne telleth no forther of the conquest; bot of þe lette where-throgh the lond was [not] clenlych I-conquered, ne the folk fully I-broght yn thedone, he telleth such resons:—Thay that fyrst comen, hadden ful wel I-spedde *wyth*-out any lette, yif þe kynge ne hadd so astyly

that was the Erlis by hys wyfe, The lorchipp clenly the Erle yaue to the kynge; and al the Pryncys of the londe ther-aftyr, by har good-will, yoldyn ham to the kynge to be euer-more subiecte to hym and to hys. Vpon al this, the pope of Rome, that is hede of al crystyndome, *and* that hath a Special ryght of al the Ilondys of crystyndome, as wid as the worlde is, he yaue Plenerly, *and* confermyd to the kynge, the lorchipp of the lond, as hit is to-fore tolde. And of eldyre ryght we fyndyth also y-writte, that the kynge of Englande haue to Irlande * of Gormon, Belynes Sone, Kyng of Brytaigne[1], that is now England, he come Into Irland, and toke the londe; *and* many a yere thay bare hym truage, *and* othyr aftyr hym, Into brytaigne. Ther-aftyr also, kynge Artoure hadd truage out of Irland[2]; and Gylmory the kynge, that that tyme was wyth othyre kynges of the Ilandis, was with hym at the grete feste that he helde at karliõn. On othyr halue, the Pepil of Irlande come fryste out of Bascles *and* out of Bayon, that longyth now to gascoyne, Wherof the kynges of Englande ben lordys. And thus ye may wel vndyrstonde that, both by olde ryght and by new, the kynges of England owen well to haue the lorchipp of Irland. And thegh the folke of the londe neuer hadd be Subiecte ther-by-fore, hit ought be y-now, that thay al, by good-will, yaue ham to the kynge henry by othys and hostages, *and* by al maner Surte that he desyrid[3]; and the Popis that ther-aftyr hym graunted *and* confermyd the lorchipp of the londe, and acorsyd al them that in any tyme ther-agayn come. ¶ And thegh thay, by kynde falsnes and vnstabilnes that in ham is, lytel tell of othys *and* of mansynge, natheles, thay were neuer, by noo man that Power hadd, therof assoilled ne vnbound. But a man may bynde hym-Selfe with Such thynge, but noght So lyght vn-bynde.

qui insulas omnes sibi speciali quodam jure respiciunt.

[*Fol. 25 b.]

[2] *Hiberniae reges Tributarios habuisse.*

Praeterea urbs Baonensis, quam hodie nostra continet Gasconia, Blasconiae caput est, unde Hibernenses provenerant.

Nota that Irysh-men bene fals of kynde.

[CHAPTER LVIII.]

Capitulum lviij^m.

Maister geraud ne tellyth no ferdyr the conquest; but of the lette wherfor the londe was [not] clenlych I-conquerid, ne the Pepil fully y-broght in theudom, he tellyth Such resonys:—Thay that fryst comen, haddyn full well y-Spede

[1] Brytaytaigne, MS. [3] firmis fidei sacramentique vinculis: v. 320.

1. Henry II's stopping the coming of the English.

I-sent, & forboden that no man ne shold to ham come; & thay that weꝛ ynto þe lond I-come, shold the lond leue, & turne ayeyne, otheꝛ forlese al that thay helden of the kynge yn otheꝛ londes. And whaꝛ the kynge was ynto the lond hymself I-come wyth so moch power, hyt had he wel ynoght, naꝛ that he hadd so sone turned ayeyne, throgh the popes heste & þe cardynals, & eke the lyddernesse that hys sones hadden I-purueyed to do hym, the whyll that he was out of lond. ffor the folk that, at the begynnynge of so sodeyne comynge, was so swyth amayed, & aferd & agrysed of the wepned men stalwarthnesse, and of the derne wondynge of arwes, throgh lange abydynge & sleuyth of Maystres that no stalwarthnesse ne sykernesse was wyth, by lytyll & lytel lerned, wepne to beꝛꝛ, arwes to shote; & so wel woned ham ther-to, that oft ham byfelle wonderly goode happes yn fyght vpoꝛ englysshe-meꝛ; & on thys maner, that at the begynnynge lyghly myght be I-shent & I-broght vnder fote, wortheꝛ bold & staluarth to wythstond, & defend ham-self. Me may rede & ouerseche the boke of kynges, þe prophetes, al the old rede fro end to otheꝛ, & other tymes that afoor haue I-be; me shal neuer fynd that weꝛ & hate came vpoꝛ folk, bot for haꝛ synnes; & so hyt may wel be of the folk of Irland, that oft serued wel, for haꝛ synnes, to haue werre & wrak of otheꝛ outlondes men; natheles, god almyghty was nat ham so wengeable wrot, that he tholled ham fully, nether al to be vndone, ne fully I-broght yn-to theudome, nether * thay clenly forelore grace; ne the other clenlych hadden grace, the Maystrye to hawe, ham fully & preysebly yn theudome for to hold. Me fynt that þe Iresshemen haddeꝛ four prophetes, euery yn hys tyme, Patryk, Molynge, Braken, & Colmkylly, whos bokes ben wyth ham an. Iresshe I-wrytte; euery of ham spekeꝛ of the fyght of thys conqueste, & seyne that 'lange stryf & oft fyghtynge shal be for thys lond; & oft the lond shal be I-horyed & I-steyned wyth grete slaght of men.' Bot vnnethe thay beheteth the Englyssh peple fully þe maystrye a lytell aꝛ domesday, & that the lond shal from see to see be I-castelled & fully I-won. Bot the englysshe-meꝛ shalleꝛ, ar that, oft wel feble be, & myche desayse yn the lond so [? se]. Barcaꝛ

2. His going home so soon after his Invasion of Ireland.

The Irish, at first frightend, learnt to fight and shoot,

and often beat the English.

War comes on folk only for their sins. The Irish sind, but God gave no one grace to enslave them.

[*Fol. 26 a.]

The four chief Irish Prophets say that the English shan't fully conquer Ireland till Doomsday;

with-out any lette, yf the kynge ne hadd So hastely y-sende *and* comandid that no man ne sholde to ham come; and thay that were Into the londe y-come, sholde the londe lewe, *and* turne ayeyn, othyr to lese al that thay heldyn of the kynge in othyre londys. And whan the kynge was Into the land hym-Selfe y-come with So mych Power, hit hadd y-be wel y-now, [1] nar that he hadd So Sone turned agayn, throgh the Popis comandment and the cardynalis, And also the wickydnys that his Sones haddyn y-Purueyed to dõne hym, the whyle that he was out of londe. For the Pepil that, at the begynnynge of So Sodeyn comynge, was So gretly aferde *and* agrisid the wepynnyd-men boldenys, *and* of the cruel woundynge of arowes, throw longe abydynge and Sleuth of Maysters, that no boldnys ne Sickyrnys was wyth, by lytell and lytell lernyd wepyñ to berre, Arrowes to shote; *and* So wel vsyd ham therto, that many tymys ham by-fell wondyrly good happys in fyght vpon englysh-men; and on this manere, that at the begynnynge lygh[t]ly myght be shente *and* broght vndyrfoote, Weryn bolde and hardy to Wythstonde *and* defende ham-Selfe / We may rede and ouerseche the boke of kynges, the prophetis, al the olde rede fro ende to oþer, *and* othyr tymys that to-for haue y-be, We shal neuer fynde that were ne hate came vpon Pepill, but for har Synnes. And So hit may wel be of the Pepil of Irland, that ofte serued wel, for har Synnes, to haue werre * and wrake of othyr strange comen men. Natheles, god almyghty was not ham so wengeabil wroth that he wolde fully ham Putte out of londe, nethyre al to be vndone, ne fully broght Into traldome, nethyr thay clenly forlorne grace. Nethyr ne othyr hadd not fully grace, the Maystry to haue, *and* ham fully *and* Pesabilly in thraldome to holde / ¶ We fyndyth that the Irysh-men haddyn iiij^e^ prophetis euery in his tyme, **Patrike, Molynge, Brakan and Colmkylle**, Whos bokis ben wyth ham in Irysh writte. Euery of ham Spekyth of the fyght of this conqueste, And Sayne that 'lange stryfe *and* of fyghtynge shal be for this londe; *and* ofte the lond shal be defowlid *and* y-steynyd wyth grete Slaght of men.' But vnnethe thay grauntyth that the Englysh pepil fully the maystry, a lytel ar the day of Dome, *and* that the lond shal from See to See / be castelid *and* fully Enhabited [2] / But þe Englysh-men shal, ar that, ofte wel febil be, *and* mych

si non primis præcurrorum adventibus regio fuisset edicto præcisa sequela.

[1] *si ab ausu nobili tam præmature intestina conspiratio non revocasset.*

confundi poterat.

totam . . Veteris Testamenti seriem.

[*Fol. 26 a.]

vel omnino subjici meruit vel deleri.

Nota de *prophetis* Hibernie.

[2] *ex toto subacta et incastellata.*

but they shall be troubled by a King from St. Patrick's Mountains.

seyth, that 'throgh a kynge that shal come out of the wyl montayngnes of seynt patrykes þat me cleppeth slesto (slesco?), & on a soneday-nyght[1], a castel yn the wodd contreys of Offalye shal to-brek, most what al the Englysshe-men of Irland shullen be I-stourbet' / /

[CHAPTER LIX.]

I'll tell you why Prince John didn't succeed in Ireland.

Now and for whych thynge hit was, that the kynges sonnes trauaille, and har mochel costes, at thys tyme ne sped nat as tham ogh, hyt ys noñ harme thegh me heꝛ sette; for thegh of thynge that ys I-past ne be no remedy, natheles, of thynge that ys to come, me may be waꝛ by ensample of haꝛ dede. Whan the kynges sone was Icome to lond at Waterford, thedeꝛ come to hym Iresshe-meñ of the contray, rych meñ, and of pees trew hym besoght, & made hym grete gladnesshe as hare lord, & profred hym to kysseñ. Thay anoon ryght of tho new meñ, & namely of the Normannes, wereñ shame-fully receyued, & lothly I-hokred, & by the berdes—whych, yn the maner of the contrey, they haddeñ grete & long—some of ham shamly wereñ I-shakeñ & I-draw. As sone as thay comen to haꝛ owne, wyth al that thay hadden thay wyth-drowen ham, & left the contrey & wenten to the kynge of Thomoñ, and hym [told], & also the kynge of desmoñ & the kynge of Connaght, what thay hadd receyued & found wyth the kynges sone. ¶ A yonglynge al wyth yonglynges gouerned; & by yonge meñ rede, al he wroght; no wytte ne no staluarthnesse wyth hym was found; no sekernese ne trouth to Iresshemeñ, thayr south nat behete. Whañ tythynges heꝛ-of was I-spronge, thay thre cheftayns of Irland that weꝛ theꝛ redy to come to the kynges sone, & ham to hym, & do hym homage, thay thogthten that, aftyꝛ thay smal harmes, woldeñ come more; & whañ me such thynge dydde to good meñ & meke, wel wors me wold do the prouth & the vnbuxum. Thay toke ham to rede, & swoꝛꝛ to-gedderꝛ that thay woldeñ vpon haꝛ lyues wythstond the ryghtes of haꝛ old fredomes, & defende, for to be al to-heweñ. And for that thay shold[2] th[is] th[yng]the better to end brynge, thay

When he landed, rich men welcomd him, but had their beards pulld by his young Normans.

The Irish went off disgusted, and told their countrymen.

The three chiefs of Ireland (of Limerick, Connaught, and Cork,)

swore they'd fight for their freedom to the death.

[1] MS. sone myght. [2] From this line to the end of the page, the ends of the lines are missing, the corner of the page being torn off.

myssayse haue in the londe. So **Brakan Seyth**, that 'throgh[1] a kynge that shal come of the wylde Montaignes of Seynte Patrickes, that is callid Selfco, and on a soneday-nyght[2], a castel in the wode contreies of Ofelanye shal breke, most what al the Englysh-men of Irland shal be strobyd.'

Slefto, alias Ofaley.

[CHAPTER LIX.]

Capitulum lix^m^.

NOw and for wyche thynge hit was, that the kynges Sones travayll, *and* his grete costes, at this tyme sped noght as tham oght, Hit is none harme thegh I her reherse. Forto speke of thynge that is Paste, is no remedy; Nevyrthelasse, of thynge that is to come, we may be-ware by ensampil of har dedes // ¶ Whan the kynges Sone was come to londe at Watyrforde, thedyr come to hym Irysh-men of the contray, rych men[3], and of trew Pees hym be-soght / and made hym grete gladnys as har lorde, *and* proferid to kysse hym. Than anoone ryght / of two new men, [4]*and* namely of the Normanes, waryn shamefully rescewid, *and* lewidly Pullid ham by the Berdys, whych, in the maner of the contrey, thay hadd grete *and* longe. Some of them wer Shamefully shaken *and* ydrawen. As Sone as thay comen to har owyn, wyth all that thay hadde, thay wythdrowen ham *and* lefte the contrey, *and* wente to the kynge of Thomonde, *and* tolde hym, *and* also the kynge of Desmonde and the kynge of Connaght, what thay hadd rescewyd *and* found with the kynges sone. ¶ A yonglynge al wyth yonglynges gouernyd, *and* by yonge men consayl al didd; And no witte ne boldnys wyth hym was founde; ne Surte, ne trouth, to yrysh-men thay couth not promyse[5]. ¶ Whan tythyngys herof was spronge, thay iij^e^ captaynys of Irland[6] that was that tyme redy to come to the kynges sone, *and* yelde ham to hym, *and* to do hym homage, thay thoghten, that aftyr thay smale harmys, wolde come more; and whan thay Such thynge did to good men *and* meke, Wel wors thay wolde do to the Prute *and* the vnbuxum. Thay toke hame to *consail, and Sware to-gadderes that thay woldyn vpon Har Lywes wythstond the ryghtes of har olde fredomys, *and* defende til thay were al hewyde. And for thay sholde this thynge the bettyr brynge to

[3] *viri non infirmi, fideles hactenus Anglis, et pacifici, tanquam domino congratulantes, et eum in osculo pacis suscipientes.*

[4] *a novis nostris et Normannis.*

[5] *nullam Hibernicis securitatem promittentes.*

[6] *tres principales tunc temporis Hiberniae postes, Limericensis, Connactensis, et Corygiensis.* Ihesus.

[*Fol. 26 b.]

antiquae libertatis sub capitum discrimine jura tuendum.

[1] per quemdam regem, de desertis Patricii montibus venturum, et nocte Dominica, castrum quoddam in nemorosis Ophelanie partibus irrupturum, omnes fere Anglici ab Hibernia turbabuntur.—*Op.* v. 385.

[2] MS. sone nyght (the same mistake, as before, in both MSS.).

The Irish rebels make friends with their foes.

Tho' false themselves, they object to others being false to them.

[*Fol. 26 b.]

John's failure is explaind by Rehoboam's, whose following of young men's advice, lost him ten Tribes of Israel.

John gave the lands of faithful Irish, to new men.

So these Irish turnd against him.

sentteñ about ynto al the lond, & allyed h . . . & maden frendes of ham that weꝛ byfore fome[n], & thus throgh ham that th . . -nyge putte (þrogh pryde) from ham, both thaye & al other most dele were . . . . þys folke, as eu*ery* otheꝛ wyld folk, thegh thay no wyrshyp*e* ne couthe . . . . me shold do ham wyrshyp*e* & manshyp*e*. And thegh thay nat be . . . . . wyth falsnesse, natheles thay shonneth that otheꝛ do ham [any falshede;] & thus the good that thay loueth yn otheꝛ, thay rech. . . . . ham to-gyddeꝛ thay . . . . . *Eu*ery* wysma*n* vnderstond hym by Roboam, Salomones sone, how mych harme falleth of pryde & ou*ertrowshyp*e. whañ he, aftyꝛ hys fadyꝛ, was made kynge of Israel, þe folk come to hym, & bysoght hym that he shold ham somwhat allegge of þe s*eruyces* that thay weꝛ I-woned to do hys fadyr. He was yonge; and by yonge meñ consaylle, answard & seyd, 'My fyngyꝛ ys gretteꝛ thañ was my faders ryggebone; & yf he yow bette wyth yardes, y wyl yow bette w*yth* breres.' ¶ Throgh that answaꝛ, the ten kynredes hym lefteñ, & maden ham kynge of Ieroboam, & neu*er* aftyꝛ weren vnder hym ne nooñ of hys: of al þe folk of Israel, non w*yth* hym abode, bot twey kynredes. Vpon thys, þe Iresshe-men londes, that, fro the tyme that Rob*ert* steuenes-sone fyrst come ynto þe lond, trewly w*yth* englysshe-men haddeñ I-be, weꝛ I-take fro ham, & yeuen to the newe meñ. And thay anooñ turned to the Iresshe-men, & aspyed al the harme that thay myght do to þe Englysshe; & weꝛe, so mych the more harme dydde, that thay so pryue weꝛ wyth ham ther-byfore

[CHAPTER LX.]

The coast towns and castles were given to rebels, who only gatherd gold, and did harm to peace-men, not to foes.

The toun*es* vp-on the see, and the castels, w*yth* the londes that to ham belonget, & the truages & the rentes that shold be I-spende yn comyn nede of the lond, & to ham, of rebelles thay waꝛ I-sette to such that wel fayne gadered gold & sylu*er* w*yth*-yn wowes, eten wel & drynkeñ, and laddeñ Idel lyf, & al thynge vnp*ro*fytably wastedeñ, to harme of pees-meñ, & nat of fomeñ. Amonge otheꝛ harmes betydde yit more, that yn lond so smert & so kene, & folk so weyward & so vnredy, & so mych harme doynge, The kepynge & the maystry toke

Ende, thay Sende about into al the londe, and allied ham togaderis, *and* madyn frendys of tham that were enemys. And thus throw ham, that thay at the begynnynge Putte (throw Pryde) from them, both thay and al otheres for the more parte was fro them stirrid. ¶ This Pepyll, as euery othyr wylde Pepill, thegh thay no wyrchipp kowth not, Natheles thay wolde that hy sholde do ham wyrchippe *and* manshipe. And thegh thay be not aferde ne ashamyd to be founde wyth falsnesse, Natheles, thay Shonnyth that any othyr sholde do ham any falshede: and thay lowyth trouth; and thus good that thay lowyth in otheres, thay thynke no fors whow lytill be found in ham-Selfe therof. Euery vysman vndyrstond hym by Roboam, Salomones Sone, how mych harym fallyth of Pryde. Whan he, aftyr his fadyr, was made kynge of Israel, the Pepil come to hym, *and* besoght hym that he sholde ham Somewhate allegge of the Servyces that thay were wonyd to do to his fadyr. He was yonge; and, by yonge men consayl, answerid and Sayde, ¶ "My fyngyr is more *and* grettyr then was my Fadyris bake-bone; And yf he bette yow wyth yardes, y will bette you *with* breris" / ¶ And for that answere, al the tene kynredes lefte hym / *and* made ham a kynge of Ieroboam; *and* neuer aftyr weryn vndyr hym, ne noone of his. Of al the Pepil of Israel, none *with* hym abode, but two kynredis. Vpon this, the Irysh-men londes that fro the tyme that Robert Steuenes Sone fryste come Into the londe, trewely wyth englysh-men haddyn, wer take fro ham, *and* yewyn to two new men[1]. And thay anoone turnyd to the Irysh-men, *and* aspied al the harme that thay myght do to þe Englysh; and werre, so mych the more harme didde, that thay were so Pryue wyth ham therto-fore[2].

Quia primos a nobis insolenter repulimus... tam illos quam majores universos eo exemplo procul absterruimus bonum quod in aliis diligunt, minus in se reperiri non erubescunt. ego vos caedam scorpionibus. [1] novis nostris, contra promissa contulimus. [2] tanto quidem ad nocendum efficaciores, quanto prius fuerant familiariores. [3] talibus est assignata, qui aurum

[CHAPTER LX.]

Capitulum lx^m.

The tounes vpon the See, *and* the castelis, wyth the londys that to ham Partenyd, and the truages and the rentes that sholde be I-Spend in the comyn Profite of the londe, *and* yaue hit to Rebellys[3], *and* to suche that well fayne gaderid golde and Syluer wyth-In wowes, etten wel, and drounken, *and* laddyn ydill lyfe, and al thynge vnprofytably wastyne, to grete harme of Pees men, *and* noght to enemys. Amonge al othyr harmys befell yit more, that in the londe So Smyrte *and* So kene, *and* Pepil So weyward and So vnredy, *and* So mych harme doynge,

assidue intra muros aucupantes ... cum civium, non hostium damno cuncta inutiliter consumebant.

The English Governors were cowards, and liked women better than war.

an hand, that leuer[1] hadde har rych robes, than ham to wepne; leuer to sytte at borde, þan hoste to lede; redyer to fle þan to fyght; leuer to hold a fayr mayd by the womb, than̄ sper & sheld to ber an hand; nether trewe to har vnderlynges, ne dredful to har enemyes. Thay had nat that good herte, ne of ky[nde] yt com̄ to ham̄, for to spar the meke, & wreke ham on the prout; bot al ayeyne that, thay sp[arid &[2]] lykled w*yth* the sterne, & pulled & strope ham that non̄ harme dydde. Vnder whych gouernours, the Iresshe-men̄ begon̄ to pryde & take ouer-hand of the englysshe, branten and slowen, robbeden̄ And stellen̄; for the maystres wyth har meygne, helden̄ ham alwey yn the cytees vpon̄ the see, þer plente was of wyn̄ & of women̄, to whych they weren al clenlych I-yeue to. Bot the lond w*yth*-In, & the marches next har enemyes, & the castles & the tounes that weren amyd, weren I-lefte & I-brant, the men I-robbed & I-sleyn, w*yth*-out any lette. The good knyghtes & the eldre folk of the lond, as men̄ that me noght told-by that whyle, wyth-drow ham al sleghtly, & held ham al stylle, for to awayty al soft, what endynge such hyddous stormes wold ham. That whyle, þe state of the lond was such, In al places was weylynge & wonynge, yollynge & crynge; Al þe weyes forlete; no man̄ ne trust to mete wyth other; euery day come newe tythynges of bernynge & sleynge, robbynge & revyng[3] yn the out londes: vnneth a lytel shadow of pees was yn þe bourgh tounes, þer the wyn quenched al þe sorowe; the gold & the syluer, al oþer harmes; thar me shold yn so lydder world wend from contray to contray wyth folk I-wepned, and chasty ham that mysdeden. Thay setten Iustyces of bench yn har robes of scarlet & menyuer: men̄ wyth swerdes & battes ham for to kepe, ther no nede was. Than was þe motynge, the pledynge and reynnynge of good men and trewe that * non harme dydden: wors ham dydde the harme & the ten that þay ther-throgh hadden̄, þan̄ the robbynge & reuynge that thar enemyes ham dydde. ¶ Another thynge that mych was to

The English Governors were cowards, and liked women better than war.

The Irish now burnt, slew, and stole.

The English of the coast stuck to wine and women.

The inland was plunderd by the Irish.

Everywhere was wailing; every day fresh news of fire and slaughter.

Judges ruind good men and true, [*Fol. 27 a.] worse than Irish foes did.

[1] MS. louer. [2] Torn out.

[3] The corner of p. 26 b was torn off before being written upon, so that there are no words missing, and the lines follow each other as usual.

The kepynge[1], *and* the men that was Maysteres to kepe the lande, he had lewer his rych clothis to were, than wepyn to berre; *and* lowid bettyr to sitte at borde, than hoste to lede; and more redyer to fle than to fyght; leuer to holde a fayre mayde by the wombe, than spere and Shelde to ber an honde. And also they wer not trewe to har Subiectis, ne dredfull to har enemys. Thay had not that * good Herte, ne of good Kynde Hit come to Ham, forto Spare the meke, *and* wreke Ham on the Prowte; but al the contrary thay did. Thay Sparid *and* fikyllid wyth the sterne, and toke *and* Pullid the meke, *and* them that noone harme did // Vndyr whych gouernors, the Irysh-men begon to be Prowde, and to haue the Maystry of the Englysh-men, *and* branten, *and* Slayne, *and* Stellen / For thay Maysteris, wyth har meny, heldyn[2] ham at al tymys in the Citteis vpon the see-syde, ther Plente was of wyne and of women, to the wyche thay yaue ham clenly to. But the lond wyth-In, *and* the marchis nexte har enemys, and the castelis *and* the tounes that weryn a-myde, weryn lefte and brante, the men robyd and Slayn, wyth-out any resistence. The good knyghtes *and* the eldyr Pepill of the londe, as men that noght is tolde by, that tyme wythdrow ham al Slyly, *and* held ham al stylle, for-to witte al Softe what Ende Suche grete Stormys sholde haue. That tyme, the state of the londe was Suche, In al Placis was wepynge and cryenge, and myche Sorrow. All the weyes was lefte, that no man trustid not to mete with anothyr; euery day come newe tythyngis of brennynge and Sleynge, robbynge and rewynge in the out-landis. Vnneth a lytyll Sadow of Pees was in the burgage tounes[3], ther the wyne quenchid al the Sorrow; the golde and the syluere, al the harmys. Thar thay Sholde, in so wyckyd a tyme, goo from contray to contray wyth Pepill y-wepenyd, *and* correcte ham that did amys; Thay Syttyn Iustices of benche in hare Roobis of Scarlete *and* menywere; men with Swerdis *and* battis forto kepe ham, ther no nede was. Than was the motynge, the pledynge, *and* reyuynge of goode men and trew, that noone harme didde. Wors hame didd the harme and the angyr that thay ther throgh haddyn / than the robbynge and reuynge that har enemys ham dide // Anothyr thynge that gretly is to mowrne, be-felle also, wher-of god was

A. D. 1185.

[1] *Stipendiaria quippe familia, suos imitata magistros, suisque majoribus morem gerens.*

[*Fol. 27 a.]

[2] [heldym MS.] *vino venerique data, maritimis in urbibus moram assidue faciebat. Antiqua vero militia novorum ingruente malitia, tanquam vilis et reprobata, latuit interim et siluit.*

[3] *sed solum in urbibus pacis ut cumque servari umbra videbatur.*

[See the Latin below, p. 152.]

A.D. 1185. rewe byfelle also, whar-of gode was worste I-quemed: Ther prince cometh newly to londe hyt becometh welle that he wyrshype god & holy chyrch, mayntenynge the ryghtes, & yeue more there-to.

Prince John spoild the Irish Church.

Bot þe newe prynce nat only held hym from that for to eche the good of holy chyrch, bot londes & rentes & pryuyleges that thay of old world hadde & vsed, at hys fyrst comynge yn many places he bename al clene; yñ other places he chaunged, & yaue wors & lasse thar for; & hyt may wel be, þat hys spede yn othere thynges was euer the wors & noght þe bettyr. On thys maner the englysshe weren both argh & woke to assayllen and to fyght, þe Iresshe stronge & bold to wythstonde, tyl that þe new prynce saue openly that al thynge vnder hys newe men yede to loste; he chaunget ham & renued, as men that nothynge couth, & drogh to hym the old knyghtes & the good men that weren ther-to-for Ivsed to fyght yn the maner of þe lond, & sette Iohn de Curcy maystre & chefteyne of al thynge that was to done; vnder whom þe state & þe pees of the lond, by as mych began anoñ ryght to amend, as Iohn, of hert & of staluarthnesshe, passed al other, passynge & throgh sechynge the Inlondes, as Desmone, Thomone, Mounester, Connaght; & let nat the meygne vndo hamself wyth oft harme & lostes, doynge to hys fomen, & oft to hym-self & to hys, as he that noght was adredde to assaye þe vnsyker aduentures of fyght & of baret.

The Irish began to rebel.

So John de Courci was made Ruler, and at once mended matters.

[CHAPTER LXI.]

Prince John had three sets of men: 1. Normans, the worst, whom he trusted most; 2. the English he brought with him; 3. the English in Ireland, the best, whom he trusted least.

[1]The yonge prynce at the begynnynge hadde wyth hym thre manere of meygne, Normannes, Englysshe, & þe Englysshe that he found yn the lond. In wyrshype, gret frenshype, & loue, he hold the fyrst & the worst; In lasse, the mydmest & the better; In allerleste, the latest & þe beste. The fyrst ne myght nat lyue wyth-out wyn, yn whyche thay weren fostred; & for-thy thay forsoken on al wyse to ben yn marches & yn castels fer from the see I-sette; no-wher bot about the kynges sone & hys body, kepe thay myght nat be, & hym folwen, & negh hym be, wyth-out any departynge. fer from the weste &

[1] The usual large initial letter is omitted here, a space being left for it in which a small t is put.

moste dysplesyd. Ther Prynce comyth newely to londe, hit becomyth that he wirchippe god and holy churche, mayntenynge the ryghtes, *and* yeue more therto. But the new Prynce, not oonly helde hym frome that, forto eche the good of hooly church; but londis and rentis *and* Pryuylegis that thay of olde Worlde hadde *and* vsyd / At his fryst comynge, in many Placis he toke al clene, and in othyr Placis he chaungid, *and* yaue Wors and lasse therfor. And hit may wel be, that his Spede in othyr thyngis was euer the wors, *and* noght the bettyr. On this maner the Englysh-men wer both febill and feynte to assaylen and to fyght, and the Irysh-men bolde *and* stronge to wythstonde, till that the new Prynce opynly Saw that al thynge vndyr his new men yede to loste. he chaunged ham, *and* remewid as men that nothynge kowth, *and* drewe to hym the olde knyghtes, and the good men that weryn therto-for y-vsyd to fyght in the maner of the londe, And Sette Ihon de Curcy, Maystyr and captayn of al thynge that was to doun, Vndyr Whom the State and the Pees of the londe, by as-mych began anoone ryght to amende, as Ihon, of herte * and of Boldnys, Passid all othyr, Passynge *and* throw shechynge the In-Londys, As Desmonde, Thomon, Mownyster, Connaght, *and* lette not the meny Vndo ham-Selfe wyth ofte harme *and* lostis, doynge to his ennemys *and* ofte to hym-Selfe *and* to his, as he that noght was adrede to assay the vnsure aduentures of fyght And of battaylle.

A. D. 1185.

nihil de novo conferentes . . quinimmo terris statim sublatis et possessionibus . . hostibus autem ad rebellandum audacissimis. summam rerum gerendarum curam commisit. [*Fol. 27 b.] *penitimas terrae partes. incertam bellici certaminis aleam.*

[CHAPTER LXI.]

The yonge Prynce at the begynnynge hadd with hym thre maner of menny, Normanes, Englysh,

Capitulum lxj^m^.

and the Englysh that he founde in the londe / In grete wyrchipp, frendshipp and loue, he helde the fryste and the worste. In lasse, the Secounde and the bettyr. And in alltherleste, the latyste and the beste. The fryste myght not lyue wyth-out wyn, in whych they weryn fosterid; And therfor thay forsoke to be in marchis and in castelis ferre frome the See ysette[1] / *and*[2] myght not be in no Place but aboute the kyngis Sone, (*and* [from] his body, kepe thay myght not be,) and hym followyn, *and* ney to hym be, with-out any departynge. ferre from the Weste, and ney to the Eeste; Fer from

In summa familiaritate primos habuimus. [2] *solum filii regis latera stipare, solum filio regis inseparabiliter assistere.*

[1] Primi vino, quo nutriti fuerant, carere non volentes, in remotis marchiis, et castris procul a mari constructis, moram facere modis omnibus recusabant.—*Op.* v. 394-5.

A. D. 1185. John's young men were boasters, liars, bribe-takers.

negħ al eeste; feꝛ from myssayse, & negh ayse, thay wyllet eu*er* to be sette. ℂ Ianglers & bosters, & of gre*a*tte othes, and stronge lyers, foderes, whybelers, Moch told by ham-self throgh pryde, & lytel by otheꝛ; yiftes & wyrshype to receyue, thay wer the fyrst; dout & p*er*rylle to receyue, thay waꝛ eu*er* the laste. The lytel good that thay dydde that w*yth* hym comeñ, that was throgh the englysshe that he w*yth* hym broght; boꝺ thay was no thynge derward w*yth* hym ayeyns the other, that no good ne couth do.

He forsook the good old Englishmen,

And for the good knyghtes & the meñ throgh whych the wey ynto the lond was fyrst I-opened, weꝛ w*yth* ham bot as forsakeñ & forlete; noñ I-cleppeth to conssaylle bot the newe; to non trusted he bot to the newe; to noñ was wyrshype I-do bot to the newe. Hyt byfelle, that whañ thay otheꝛ wythdrowe ham for such thynge, & lete ham I-worth, yn al thynge that thay dydde, lytel or noght thay sp[ed]de. Such gyltes & so many, thegħ thay both weꝛ myche

the wise whom the rebels needed.

to w*ite*, yong old & yonge rede, natheles þe yonge lyddeꝛ rede was more gylty; ffore boustyous lond and vnredy, hadde al nede to be Irotet and I-kept throgħ wyse meñ & redy.

[CHAPTER LXII.]

John builds three Castles, at Ardfinan, Lismore, Tibragh.

[*Fol. 7 b.]

Three Knights are slain. R. Fitz-Hugh, &c.

Men of Thomond, or Limerick, slain; and O'Grady (?) Dermot, King of Desmond dies.

[1] Aftyr that the kynges sone hadde the lordshype of Irland, & ynto the lond was y-come, Aduentures byfelle that maystyꝛ Gerot shortly toucheth. Of thre castels that he anoñ ryght lete rere, on at Ardfyna*n*, anotheꝛ at lysmore, the thyrd at Tybraghnych. Of thre staluarth * knyghtes that throgh grete mesaduentuꝛ weren I-slawe, Rob*er*t de Barry at Lysmore; Reymond, hughes sone, at Olethañ; Reymon of Cantetoñ yn Osserye. Of a p*ar*tye of the meygne of Ardfynan that the kynge of Thomoñ descomfyted yn a wod þ*er* negħ on a mydsomyꝛ day, And fouꝛ knyghtes that theꝛ weꝛ y-slaw; & thay of Tothmoñ the sam day wer dyscomfyt to-foꝛ Tybragħ; & a grete Iresshe-man, Ograde, was ther I-slawe, wyth many otheꝛ of the meygne of Ardfynañ, that sone aftyꝛ, yn a prey-takynge toward lymeryke weyes dyscomfyte, & xix knyghtes I-slawe. Of the prynce Of Desmoñ, Dermot Maccarthy, that w*ith* many otheꝛ yn a p*ar*lement

[1] The usual large initial letter is omitted, space being left for it.

myssayse, *and* nygh to ayse, thay wolde eu*er* to be sette. // Iangleris, bosteris, and of grete othis, stronge lyeris, lycheres. Why-beleres, Moche sette by ham-selfe for Pride, *and* lytill by others: yiftis and wyrchipp to rescewe, thay were the fryst; Dowte and Peril to rescewe, thay wer eu*er* the laste. The lytill good that thay didd' that wyth hym comyn, that was throgh the Englyssh that he wyth hym broght. But thay was nothynge Derward wyth hym agaynys the othyr, that no good ne couth do / And for the good knyghtes and the men, throw whych the wey into the lond was fryste oppenyd, wer wyth ham but as forsakyn *and* forlete / non callid to consaill, but the newe; to noone trustid he[1], but to the new; to noone was wirchipp dōnē, but to the newe. [2] Hit befel that, whan thay othyr wythdrow hame for Suche thynge, and lette ham alone, wyth al thynge that thay did, Lytell or noght thay Spede. Such gyltes and So many, thegh thay both wer mych to witte, yonge elde *and* yonge rede, natheles the yonge lewid consaylle was mor gylty; For bostious, loude *and* vnredy, hadd grete nede to be y-rotid and y-kepete throgh wysmen and redy.

A. D. 1185.

verbosi, jactatores, enormium juramentorum auctores.

1 *solum novis fidem habentes, solum novos dignos honore putavimus.*

2 *effectum est ut illis se retrahentibus, et invitis operas non ingerentibus, in cunctis ayendis parum isti profecissent.*

[CHAPTER LXII.]

Capitulum lxij^m.

Aftyr that tyme that the kynges Sone hadde the lordshipp of Irland', and into the londe was come, aduentures befell that Maystyr geraude Sortely touchyth. Of th[r]e castelis that he anoone ryght lette rere, oone at ardfynan, anothyr at lysmore, the thyrde at Tybraght. Of thre bolde and hardy knyghtes, that throw gret mysaduenture weryn slayne, Robert de Barry at lysmore, Reymond Hughes-sone at Olethan, Reymond of Canteton in Ossory. Of a party of the meny of ardfynan, that the kynge of Thomon̄ descomfited in a wodde ther neygh, On a Mydsomer day, And four knyghtes that were Slayn; and thay of Thomonde the same day wer discomfite to-*for tybraght; and a grete Irysh-man, Odrade, Was ther Slayn, wyth many othyr Of the meny of ardfynan, that Sone aftyr in a pray-takynge toward lymerike weies Discomfite[3], and xix knyghtes wer Slayn. Of the Prynce of Desmonde, Dermot Maccarthy, that with many othyr in

fatis adversis et aversis.

De parte quadam Archphinensis familia.

[*Fol. 28 a.]

De . . Oggravi interemptione.

[3] in praedae captione versus Limericum confectis.—*Op.* v. 386.

A.D. 1185. Ulstermen slain. besyde Corke, throgh Tybaud wauter & the meygne of Corke, was I-slawe. Of the meñ of kenalayne, that to boldely wenttеñ ynto Mythe to preyeñ, & ther wereñ I-slawe throgh Wyllyam le petyt, & an hundert heedes of ham I-broght to dyuelyñ. Of other holy bodyes, patryke, Bryde, &, Colmekyl, at doun I-found, & by Iohn de Courcy wer translated; of hugh de lacy, that to trysty was vpon hys Iresshe-meñ, & by traysoñ of ham was I-heded at dernagh. ¶ Of thretteñ knyghtes, that vnder Iñon de Courcy weren I-slawe at a comynge out of Connaght. Of the staluarth yonge knyght Roger the power, that wyth many of hys, throgh traysone, yn Osserye was I-slawe; & throgh that thynge, al the Iresshe of the lond stylly sworne ham to-gyddyr ayeyns the Englysshe; wher throgh that, [1]castels yn many places wereñ I-cast adoun, many meñ I-slawe, to grete perrylle to al the lond; & of many other aduentures that betyddeñ aftyr that the kynges sone was lord of Irland, of whyche maystyr Geraud, ham & har gestes leueth to other that ham wrytte wold, & lust haddeñ ther-to[1]. And as thys An end maked of thys boke.

Saints' bodies found.

Hugh de Laci slain, A.D. 1186.

Roger le Poer slain. The Irish silently conspire, destroy castles, and kill men.

[1–1] destructis castris pluribus, gravi insulae universae perturbatione: non indigna memoratu singula, translato in filium regis jam regni dominio, sua suorumque gesta suis assignando scriptoribus, ad ulteriora simul et utiliora festinamus.—*Op.* v. 387–8.

The unenglisht last Chapters.

Thus ends Ch. 35 of Giraldus's 2nd Book of his *Expugnacio*. His Ch. 36 is our 60, pp. 142–7, with an added Vision of 'Prince John marking out the foundations of a church, with a large nave and a very small chancel.' His Ch. 37 is our 61, pp. 146–9. In his Ch. 38, he states how the Irish are to be conquerd: in Ch. 39, how they are to be governd. Mr. Dimock's side-notes to these two Chapters are:

Ch. 38. "In every expedition, the counsel of those ought to be followed, who are best acquainted with the country and manners

a parlement besyde Corke, throgh Tybaud Wauter *and* the meny of Corke, was y-Slayñ.• Of the men of kynnaleȳñ, that So boldely wentyn Into Myth, ther to take a pray, *and* ther weryn Slaȳñ throgh Willam le Petyte, and an C. hedys of ham broght to Deuelyn // Of othyr hooly bodies, Patrike, Bryde, and Colmekil / at doun y-found, *and* by Ihoñ de Curcy were translated. Of Hugh de lacy, that tó trysty was vpon his Irysħ-men, And by traysone of ham was hedid at Dernagħ // Of xiij^{e} knyghtes, that vndyr Ihoñ de Curcy weryn Slayn at a comynge out of connaght; of the bolde yonge knyght, Roger the Powere, that wyth many of his, throw trayson, in Ossory was Slayñ; And Throw that thynge, aĺl the Irysħ-men of the londe Pryuely Sworne ham to-giddyr ayeyñes the Englyssħ-men; Wherthrow that, castellis in many Places weryn caste dovne, *and* many men Slaȳñ, in Peril of al the londe. And of many othyr aduentures that by chanse fell, aftyr that the kynges sonne was lorde of Irlande, the whych Maystyr Geraud, haṁ and har gestis lewyth to othyr that ham write wille, *and* luste haw therto; And as thus an ende makyth of this boke.

A.D. 1185. *in colloquio prope Corcagiam, a Corcagiensibus et Theobaldi Gualteri familia ferro peremptis.*

Dernagh in fercall.

et ejusdem casus occasione, clandestina quoque totius Hibernici populi in Anglos conjuratione.

Et Sic finis est istius Libri.
Laus deo clementissimo.

---

of the people. The great difference between French warfare, and that of Ireland and Wales [is]: In these countries, light-armed troops [are] more especially necessary. In any expedition into Ireland or Wales, the troops of the Welsh Marches [are] by far the best. In Irish warfare, archers [ought] to be united with the cavalry. The three parts of the island on this side the Shannon [ought] to be well incastellated; the other part won by degrees.

Ch. 39. The necessity of firm, severe, but moderate rulers. In time of peace, castles [ought] to be built, and roads to be

improved. The Irish, once fully subjected, [ought] to be forbidden the use of arms; [and] meanwhile not to be allowed to bear the axe. [They ought] to pay an annual tribute in gold or birds."

Giraldus's Third Book tells how he found and translated the Prophecies of Merlin of Celidon.

When John became King of England, Giraldus sent him a copy of his *Topographia* and *Expugnacio*, with a Proem or Dedicatory Letter printed in the Rolls edition, v. 405–411. It reminds John of Ireland, exhorts him not to forget *it*, the Golden Isle, in favour of England, the Silver one; says it will form a kingdom for one of his sons; warns him that he must leave no danger behind him in Ireland when he goes to recover the foreign possessions he has lost; calls on him to fulfil Henry II's pledges to Pope Adrian, that is, to exalt the Church in Ireland and pay Peter's pence; instances God's vengeance on the non-keeping of these pledges; says how miserable the state of the Irish Church is; and advises John to take an annual tribute of gold, birds, or trees, from the Irish in token of subjection. Lastly, Giraldus asks that a scholar may translate his books into French; gives Walter Map's opinion on his own talk and Giraldus's writings; and says that he (Giraldus) is now old, and 'desires only God's favour and the appreciation of his labours by posterity.'

---

pp. 144–5, lines 9–2 from foot. The side-note and Latin in the Rolls edition, v. 392, are:

Prevalence of law-suits.

Praeterea, quamquam hostilitatis instante procella, armatae militiae tempus ingruerit, non togatae, tanta tamen civilium causarum urgebat importunitas, ut miles veteranus non tam hoste foris, quam intus foro vexaretur.

As to the state of Ireland in 1515, see the document printed in my *Ballads from MSS.* (Ballad Soc.), p. 38–40.

GLOSSARY

(MAINLY)

BY THOMAS AUSTIN.

& (and), an, a, 2/3, 116/7; & noon, anon, 72/18.

A, *prep.* on, 12/17, 16/35; in, 44/8; by, 66/2.

Abate, *vb.* flutter the wings, 56/32. Used like *Bate*.

Aboue, *adv.* above, he was all a., had the upper hand, 120/3; abouen, 116/27; abow, 117/26, 121/3.

Abydynge, *sb.* expectation, 111/33.

Abydynge, *vb.* a. aftyr ham, waiting for them, 124/28.

Adde, *vb.* had, 68/2.

A-fryght, *pp.* frightened, afraid, 114/22.

Agryse, *pp.* terrified, 100/2.

Agylte, *vb.* sin, 88/1.

Aleueth, *num. adj.* eleven, 118/14. See opposite page.

Allerformest, foremost of all, 50/24; alther-formyst, 51/24.

Allerleste, least of all, 146/28; all-therleste, 147/28.

Aller-next, next of all, 12/33; alther-nexte, 13/34.

Allience, *sb.* alliance, allies, 73/27, 87/8.

Allyees, *sb.* allies, 72/27. Fr. *alliés*.

Alonge, *adv.* always, 54/29.

Alout, *adv.* all out, or ? aloud, 104/12.

Althyr, 101/3, ? either.

Aly, *adj.* holy, 42/36.

Amaied, *pp.* amayed, dismayed, 12/16; amayed, 16/31, 20/33, 56/5.

Amonneschyd, *vb.* admonished, warned, 57/13; amonessed, 93/10; amonested, 56/13, 92/10.

An, *prep.* on: an-heghe, on high, 112/34, an-hey, 113/34; an-hond, in hand, 74/17; an-hors, on horseback, 58/25, 100/28; an Iresshe, in Irish, 116/33.

Anguysshes, *sb.* anguishes, anxieties, 96/13; angwyschis, 97/13.

Anguysshous, *adj.* anxious, 104/8. O.Fr. *anguissus*.

Anone ryght, *adv.* straightway, 148/22; anoone-ryght, 82/2.

Aplesid, *pp.* a. of, pleased with, 37/35.

Ar, *pron.* their, 8/17. See *Har*.

Ar, *conj.* ere, 8/9, 22/23, 74/34; are, before, 9/10; before, 58/10.

Ared, *vb.* tell, declare, 97/25; arede, 96/26.

Arere, *vb.* lift up, stir up, 22/1; set right, heal, restore, 44/5; restore, rebuild, 106/9; areren, raise, 44/15; arered, raised, 30/16; arrere, 23/1.

Arew, arow, in a row, 71/13; a rewe, 70/13.

Argh, *adj.* timid, cowardly, 16/30, 114/6 (feinte, 115/6)[1].

Argly, *adv.* timidly, in a cowardly way, 16/23 (fently, 17/23)[1].

Arreden, *vb.* eared, ploughed, cultivated, 128/7; Erredyn, 129/7.

Artrow, *sb.* overtrow, mistrust, suspicion, 133/13; ortrow, 132/14.

[1] In all old words like *argh*, *arghly*, the reader should look on the opposite page for the Rawlinson MS. equivalent, which is generally later, thus for the Dublin *ar*[*y*]*ved*, 24/34, the Rawlinson has *londide*.

Aryse, *vb.* arise, rebel, 132/5; arryse, 133.
Aryued, *vb.* arrived, landed, 24/34.
As, *conj.* for *ac*, but, 4/2.
Asquynt, *adv.* asquint, aslant, obliquely, 94/20.
Assemble, *vb.* join battle, 24/15, 30/26.
Assembly, *vb.* assemble, 64/5.
Asseth, *sb.* satisfaction, penance, 86/23.
Astage, *sb.* hostage, 24/23.
Astryf, *adv.* astrife, emulously, with rivalry, 50/26.
Atene, *vb.* vex, irritate, 38/24.
Ather, *conj.* either, or, 100/3. Note pronunciation.
A thre, in three parts, 104/26; at thre, 67/19.
Attyre, *sb.* venom, 20/23, 102/27, 114/2.
Auctorice, *vb.* legalise, set in authority, 107/27 (avaunce, 106/27).
Aurel, *sb.* April, 77/28; auril, 76/28.
A-waitede, *vb.* watcht, expected, 2/19.
Aweyward, *adv.* awayward, off the land, *i. e.* westwardly, 66/33; away, 130/19.
Awreke, *vb.* a. hym, awreak himself, avenge himself, 4/5.
A yere, *adv.* yearly, 66/2.
Ayeyne, *prep.* against, on the approach of, 130/2; *adv.* again, 130/3.
Ayeyns, *prep.* against, to meet, 54/13.
Ayse, *sb.* ease, 148/1.

Bad, *vb.* prayed, 28/11.
Baghel, *sb.* bagle, crosier, 122/13, 123/12; baghell, 122/12. L. *baculum*.
Bale, *sb.* sorrow, evil, 20/24.
Baret, *sb.* barrat, strife, battle, 146/23.
Barnen, *vb.* burnt, 54/4.
Battes, *sb.* bats, sticks, staves, 144/28; battis, 145/31.
Becomlyche, *adj.* becoming, comely, 76/14; becomly, 102/20; becumliche, 54/24.
Becryed, *vb.* cryed to, called on, 30/32, 46/20.
Begetes, *sb.* begets, gains, 81/15; beyetes, 80/15.
Begynnyge, *vb.* begin, 54/21.
Be-heght, *pp.* promised, 40/9; be-het, *vb.* promised, 18/34; behete, 28/19, 114/29.
Behoud, *sb.* behoof, benefit, 112/30.
Behowaybyll, *adj.* behovable, needful, suitable, 121/4; covenable, D.
Belad, *pp.* narrow b., treated them straitly or hardly, 40/21; bilad hym, led him, lived, 2/9; hard biladde, *vb.* treated hardly, 2/6; bylad, 41/22; by-ladde, conducted, bore, 54/12.
Beleft, *vb.* remained, 118/14; *pp.* remaining, left, 58/10.
Belokene, *pp.* shut in, 50/12; belokken, 51/12. See *Belouke*, N. E. D.
Belyggynge, *vb.* beleaguing, beleaguering, 104/5.
Be-name, *vb.* forbad, 31/9; be-nomen, *pp.* taken away, 60/34; byname, deprive of, 100/9.
Berewid, *vb.* bereft of, 45/5; berewys, bereave, *imper.*, 35/10.
Berre, *vb.* bear, 145/2.
Besech, *vb.* beseek, try to get, cast at, show to, 110/30 (malyngne agayuys, 111/30).
Besete, *vb.* beset, blockade, 48/16: *pp.* set, possest, 102/19; besette, 103/19.
Be-taght, *vb.* betook, gave, committed, entrusted, 86/14.
Be-tak, *vb.* accompanyed, 20/18; betake, 21/18; betaken, settled, arranged, 72/31; betoke, entrusted to, 108/27.
Betheght, *vb.* betook, gave to, 92/11; betoke, 93/11.
Bethwene, *prep.* between, 10/12.
Blote, *adj.* soft, marshy, wet, 122/3.
Blywe, *adv.* belive, quickly, 29/30.
Bolnys, *sb.* boldness, 111/35.
Bolthenys, *sb.* boldness, 75/15.
Bostious, *adj.* rough, boisterous, 149/17; boustyous, 148/17.
Bot, *adj.* both, 106/12.
Bot, *conj.* but, unless, 68/13, 106/12; bot yf, unless, 78/30.
Both, *conj.* but, 14/34, 22/7, 32/25, 50/4; bott, 22/32; bot, 106/12.
Boxome, *adj.* obedient, loyal, non-rebellious, 32/29.
Boxom-fastines, *sb.* buxomfastness

firm obedience, 62/18; buxumfastnys, 63/18.
Branden, *vb.* burnt, 14/24; brandyn, 15; branten, 120/33.
Brouken, *vb.* brook, enjoy, hold, 34/13.
Buryles, *sb.* buryels, burials, graves, 37/21; (pute, pits, 36/18).
Buttellerie, *sb.* butlery, buttery, 62/27. O. Fr. *bouteillerie.*
By, *vb.* be, 106/15.
By, *prep.* about, near, 15/6; by so, on these terms, 24/23; by forward, by agreement, 74/9; by-halues, besides, aside, 74/24; by so that, on the terms that, 24/23.
Bygger, *sb.* buyer, 40/2, 7.
Byled, *vb.* built, 128/10.
Bynyn, *vb.* benime, take away, 68/22.
Byssy, *adj.* busy, 99/18.
Byth, *vb.* beeth, are, 33/26.

Cabilys, *sb.* cables, 13/12.
Calange, *sb.* challenge, claim, 21/1. O. Fr. *Calanger.*
Campled, *vb.* wrangled, contended, fought, 74/33; camplid, 75/33.
Camplynges, *sb.* wranglings, contests, battles, 126/13.
Candrede, *sb.* cantred, hundred, 56/21; cantred, 8/19, 12/33; a Cantrede is 'an hundret toun lond' (100 townlands or townships), 124/2.
Castel, *vb.* castle, fortify, 127/22; castely, 126/22; casteled, 128/3.
Cee, *sb.* see: Cee churche, Cathedral, 37/31.
Chamfaste, *adj.* shamefast, 76/13.
Chase, *pp.* chosen, 124/12.
Cheffar, *sb.* trade, 12/7.
Chek-toth, *sb.* cheek-tooth, grinder, double tooth, 108/8.
Chepmen, *sb.* chapmen, 38/33.
Cheuetayn, *sb.* chieftain, 26/11.
Chippe, *sb.* ship, 13/13; chippis, ships, 13/6.
Chippmen, *sb.* shipmen, 13/10.
Churchey, *sb.* churchyard, 71/26; church-hay, 63/32.
Clene, *adv.* clean, quite, entirely, 146/7.
Clenly, *adv.* cleanly, quite, wholly, 121/3, 145/15; clenlych, 120/3.
Clepynge, *sb.* calling, call, 76/2.
Clewe, *vb.* cleft, clave, 31/34, 71/32.
Clos, *sb.* close, enclosed land, 10/5.
Come, *sb.* arrival, coming, 108/15, 120/30; comys, 109/15.
Comerous, *adj.* cumbrous, difficult to pass, 54/8.
Comynly, *adv.* in common, together, 34/33, 38/30.
Condicones, *sb.* 125/15; theves, 124/15.
Conquestre, *sb.* conquest, 56/22. O. Fr.
Constytucions, *sb.* constitutions, laws, 64/26.
Cornelis, *sb.* crenelles, battlements, 16/31.
Corpus domini, *sb.* mass-wafer, 52/23.
Coste, *sb.* purpose (R.), 68/4, 74/17.
Costes, *sb.* coasting-vessels?, 80/5.
Croice, *sb.* cross, 36/29; cros, 37/29. O. Fr. *crois.*
Croun, *sb.* crown of the head, 42/27; croune, 42/24.
Culuertnesse, *sb.* falseness, villainy, 126/31.
Cytteyns, *sb.* citizens, 122/27. O. Fr. *citeien*; *citayn.*

Dawes, *sb.* days, out of d. = out of life, 34/10, 76/4.
Defended, *vb.* = defendeth, let us defend, *imper.*, 20/28.
Defeuly, *vb.* defoul, tread under foot, 35/29; defouly, 34/29.
Dele, *sb.* deal, part, 62/21.
Deled, *vb.* dealt, divided, 104/25.
Delycion, ? *sb.* daintiness, 98/13.
Delycious, *adj.* delicate, dainty, 99/14.
Demyd, *pp.* deemed, doomed, sentenced, 35/15.
Dennysh, 46/17; Danish.
Derne, *adj.* hidden, 18/30, 114/22.
Dernely, *adv.* secretly, privily, 78/8.
Derward, *adj.* dearworth, precious, 110/34; derwarthest, most valuable, 36/25.
Destrued, *pp.* destroyed, 106/10.
Deue, *adj.* deaf, 44/13.
Deynously, *adv.* disdainfully, 72/3.
Didden, dydde, *vb.* See *Do.*
Do, *vb.* put, 30/6, 38/34, 94/16; turn, 76/6; done hym on, set him on, 100/3; didde, *past t.* turned, 16/31; didden, set, 10/1; dydde, set, 70/7

Dobbe, *vb.* dub, 94/13.
Dome, *sb.* judgment, 34/14.
Dotous, *adj.* doubtful, uncertain, 86/17; doutos, 87/17; doutouse, 24/13.
Doute, *vb.* fear, 24/15.
Drawen, *vb.* protract, lead, 50/4.
Dredlyche, *adj.* dreadly, dreadful, terrible, 114/9.
Drent, *vb.* drowned, 32/5.
Durke, *adj.* dark, 50/9.
Durknesse, *sb.* darkness, 50/10.
Durre, *sb.* door, 42/22.
Dyd, *vb.* set, placed, 74/29. See *Do.*
Dynt, *sb.* dint, stroke, 46/17.
Dysheryted, *vb.* 40/20; disinherited.
D for th, 16/34.
Day, *pron.* they, 10/19, 12/21, 24/10.
Drogh, *prep.* through, 12/24, 14/8, 18/9, 22/7.
I-Drow, *pp.* thrown, 18/1.
Dynge, *sb.* thing, 88/27.

Eche, *vb.* increase, 146/4.
Edwyte, *vb.* reproved, twitted, rebuked, 60/9.
Eft, *adv.* after, 82/13, 88/26, 90/1 efte, 108/29.
Elde, *sb.* eld, age, 58/30.
Eldren, (*adj.*)? *sb.* forefathers' (or ancestral), 38/17; eldryñ, 39/17.
Eldrene, *sb.* ancestors, 28/6, 7; eldryn, 29/6, 7.
Elf (fare), 17/13; helf (fare), 16/14; elves' doings.
Eme, *sb.* eam, nephew, 31/14, 73/35; emys, 15/33, 101/15.
Enchesoun, *sb.* occasion, cause, 88/2, 20/16.
Encombrement, *sb.* encumbernent, obstruction, annoyance, harm, 22/13.
Eneche, *vb.* (? increase) ineche, implant, 92/1.
Engyn, *sb.* art, contrivance, 18/28.
Ense, *sb.* ends, 80/29.
Entre, *sb.* entry, 54/6; entrest, 55/7.
Entredyte, *vb.* interdict, lay under interdict, 68/15.
Enuy, *sb.* envy, 20/19.
Enuyouse, *adj.* envyous, 114/6; envyouse, enulous, 100/2.
Er, *adv.* ere, before, 120/29.
Erne, *vb.* earn, mourn, 34/28.
Erne, *sb.* eagle, 114/18.
Ers, *sb.* ears, 15/24.
Erthe-weyes, *sb.* ways under ground, 19/30.
Erth-hous, *sb.* underground dwelling, 120/31.
Estren, *adj.* eastern, east, 28/27.
Ette, *vb.* ate, 89/22.
Eunynge, *sb.* evening, equal, peer, 54/19.
Evyncrystyñ, *sb.* fellow-christian, 39/11, 67/14.
Exstymacioun, *sb.* suspicion, 129/14. O. Fr. *exstimation.*
Eygne, *sb.* eyes, 97/17.

Facon, *sb.* falcon, 58/4; faucoun gentel, 56/30.
Fale, *adj.* fele, many, 74/10, 86/4.
Falthyr, *sb.* fautors, favorers, partisans, 79/7. Fr. *fauteur.*
Fantstones, *sb.* fontstones, stone fonts, 64/33; fantstonys, 65.
Farcostes, *sb.* far-coasters?, 80/5, 81/5.
Fawes, *sb.* falls?, heavy things droft, 96/2; fawis, 97/2.
Febelier, *adj.* more feeble, 69/5.
Fele, *adj.* many, 16/10.
Felony, *sb.* villany, 102/3.
ffer, *adv.* f. within-yn nyght, far into the night, 16/9.
Ferd, *sb.* host, army, 14/5.
Ferde, *sb.* fear, 17/14.
Ferdnesse, *sb.* fear, fright, 20/29, 38/27.
Ferly, *adj.* strange, 16/29.
Ferly, *adv.* wonderfully?, 16/12.
Fersly, *adv.* fiercely, 17/11.
Ferth, *num. adj.* fourth, 118/19.
Festnen, *vb.* make firm, restore, 44/14.
Feynte, *adj.* faint, idle, 115/6.
Feyre, *adv.* far, 50/34.
Fikyllid, *vb.* temporised, 145/9.
Fleted, *vb.* floated, 116/26.
Fletes, *sb.* fleets, 80/9; flittes, 81/9; flot, 126/23; flytte, 127/23.
Fleysly, *adj.* fleshly, fleshy, 100/1.
Flittes, *sb.* See *Fletes.*
Flote, *sb.* fleet, herd of swine, 74/1.
Flowen, *vb.* fled, 96/21.
Fobler, *adj.* feebler, 68/6.
Fodores, *sb.* deceivers, 148/3.

Folk, *adj.* ? for foble, feeble, 50/15.
Folke-mele, indiscriminately, 36/3.
Foolrede, *sb.* fool's counsel, foolery, folly, 68/20; fooly, 69.
Foot-falle, *vb.* prostrate oneself, 62/18.
For, *conj.* in order that, 104/24.
Forcleue, *vb.* cleft, 58/2; for-clew, 59/2.
Fore-lete, *vb.* let go, 68/29.
For-hold, *pp.* withheld, kept unburied, 108/14.
Forlese, *vb.* forelost, lost, 54/11.
Formane, *sb.* leader, 36/1; formene, front ranks, 30/33.
Forme, *adj.* first, 64/15; formest, *super.*, 50/28; formyst, 51.
Forshape, *pp.* misshapen, 130/25.
Forsoke, *vb.* renounce, refuse, decline, 4/13, 78/17; for-sok, 72/16.
Forsoken, *vb.* declined, 104/12.
Forswely, *vb.* swallow up, 58/27.
Fort, *conj.* till, 84/27, 126/11.
Fortelet, *sb.* fortlet, 116/6.
Forth, (before 'with') *adv.* forthwith, 20/5, 90/20, 104/32.
For-þane, *conj.* Nat f. notwithstanding, 4/1.
For-they, *conj.* therefore, 78/22; ffor-thy, 72/23.
Forthmost, *adj.* foremost, 16/4.
Forume, *sb.* form, 39/12.
Forwarde, *sb.* bargain, 10/12; agreement, 74/9, 108/30; forward-makynge, m. of agreements, 128/9.
Fourdyr, *adv.* further, 15/25.
Franchise, *sb.* freedom, 20/15.
Fresly, *adv.* fiercely, 14/12, 35/34; fressely, 81/9.
Frightnes, *sb.* fright, 16/15, 26.
Fryst, *num.* first, 17/4, 31/33.
Fyf, *num. adj.* five, 62/21; fywe, 63/21.
Fylthed(e), *sb.* filthhead, filthiness, 64/6, 65/6.
Fyne, *sb.* fine, 66/10.

Galosis, *sb.* gallows, 35/16.
Galyotz, *sb.* pirates ?, 22/32.
Garnesyd, *pp.* garnished, fortified, 51/1. Fr. *garnir*.
Gentil, *sb.* gentry, set, 101/17.
Gentryce, *sb.* set, clan, 112/2.
Gentrye, *sb.* gentry, 100/18.
Gestes, *sb.* deeds, 120/10.
Gettynges, *sb.* gettings, gain, plunder, 26/34.
Girsliche, *adv.* terribly, 14/22 (? *adj.*).
Good, *sb.* goods, 54/5.
Grad, *vb.* cried out, 4/1.
Greped, *vb.* griped, gripped, 126/26.
Grewid, *vb.* grieved, pained, 109/9; grewid, *pp.* 39/25.
Grymly, *adj.* dreadful, terrible, 59/13.
Gylte, *sb.* fault, 40/8.
Gyued, *vb.* gyved, fettered, 60/10; gywid, 61/10.

Half, *sb.* side; ethere h., either side, 8/19; euerich h., every side, 4/16; euche h., each side, 5/18; hys h., his side, 24/32; oon h., one side, 22/25; a south h., on the south side, 30/16; on his moþer half, on his mother's side, 8/15; halue, *pl.* 100/21.
Halte, *vb.* held, 64/10; holte, hold, 64/11.
Halowene, *sb.* saints, 122/1; halwene, 44/11.
Hame, *pron.* them, 4/12.
Hamlynge, *adj.* ambling, 89/21.
Hand, *sb.* other h., second hand, 78/17.
Har, *pron.* their, 9/17, 10/20, 74/31, 120/30; hare, 31/14; theirs, 32/15.
Har, *adv.* ere, sooner.
Hard, *pp.* heard, 29/32.
Hardynes, *sb.* hardiness, boldness, 110/35.
Haris, *pron.* theirs, 49/33; hars, 48/34.
Hauteyne, *adj.* haughty, 76/16. O. Fr. *hautain*.
Haw, *vb.* have, 34/7; hawydyn, had, 27/7.
Haye, *sb.* hay, haw, churchyard, 63/32; 62/32.
Hedid, *pp.* headed, beheaded, 151/8.
Heed, *sb.* ? head, 78/33; heeddes, heads, princes ?, 34/28.
Heere, *sb.* hair, hair-cloth, 42/5; here, 43/5.
Hegh, *vb.* hight ('was callid'), 92/23.
Hegheste, *adj.* highest ('host' 12/33), 13/33.
Heghlygh, *adv.* highly, 90/25.
Helf far, 16/14, *sb.* elves' doing.

Helle, *vb.* helde, 2/24.
Hellen, *vb.* conceal, hide, 78/1.
Hent, *vb.* received, 10/35; henten, grasp, seize, 56/33, 80/26.
Herbrowe, *vb.* harbour, seek shelter, 66/6.
Here, *pron.* their, 18/29.
Here, *adv.* here, 32/10.
Herly, *adv.* early, 70/7.
Herne, *sb.* nook, corner, 116/7.
Herrer, *sb.* herre, lord, 116/30.
Herth, *sb.* heart, 2/8, 22/28, 50/20.
Herthly, *adj.* earthly, 66/4.
Hertly, *adv.* heartily, courageously, 52/2; hertely, 53/2.
Het, *vb.* was named, 2/3.
Heudes, *sb.* heads, 14/17.
Hey, *adj.* high, 57/29.
Heye, *sb.* 70/27. See *Church-hey*.
Heyth, *adj.* high, noble, 22/32.
Hite, *pron.* it, 25/20.
Hoft-sithes, *adv.* oftentimes, 16/14.
Hold, *adj.* whole, faithful, 60/14; holde, whole, healthy, 59/24.
Homward, *adv.* take h., go home, 86/3.
Hoped, *vb.* looked to, trusted in, had confidence in, 70/22.
Horynesse, *sb.* filthiness, 66/27. Comp. *horowe*, foul, used by Chaucer, pronounced *horry* in Devon. H.
Host, *sb.* army, 16/10, 11, 104/26, 144/2.
Host, *adj.*? hest, hext, highest, largest, 12/32.
Hostyngis, *sb.* expeditions, armies, 17/14.
Hungrod, *adj.* hungered, hungry, 116/8.
Hurtyng, *sb.* hurting, hurt, 16/34.
Hym, *pron.* him; hym þriddesom, comp. Gr. *αὐτὸς τρίτος*, 14/1, 32/20.
Hyrynge, *adj.* hireling, waged, 22/31.

Iappynge, *sb.* japing, jesting, 54/26; Iaypynge, 55/27.
I-bansheth, *pp.* banished, 24/1; y-banshet, 25/1.
I-bydde, *pp.* abided, stayd, 62/8.
I-corne, *pp.* chosen, 22/18.
I-deleth, *pp.* dealt, divided, 66/19.
I-destrued, *pp.* destroyed, 84/32.
I-dobbed, *pp.* dubbed, 94/13.
I-drow, *pp.* thrown, d = th, 18/1.
I-dyght, *pp.* prepared, 58/19.
I-endeth, *pp.* ended, 22/16.
I-flow, *pp.* fled, 46/27.
I-fulled, *pp.* baptized, 64/33; yfullid, 65/33.
I-garnset, *pp.* garnished, fortified, 50/1.
I-hard, *pp.* heard, 28/32.
I-heded, *pp.* beheaded, 150/7.
I-helled, *pp.* ihcled, covered, 10/21.
I-herberged, *pp.* filled, stowed, 108/34; I-herbergide, 109/34.
I-herberowide, *pp.* harboured, sheltered, 63/31; I-horberowed, 62/31.
I-hodet, *pp.* hooded, 132/28.
I-hokred, *pp.* insulted, 140/16.
I-horied, *pp.* defiled, 138/32.
I-hosted, *pp.* hosted, quartered, 16/9.
I-lacet, *pp.* laced, 10/17.
Illy, *adv.* in an ill way, 78/7.
Ilyche, *adv.* alike, 66/19.
I-meygnet, *pp.* mingled, 102/27.
Inamliche, *adv.* namely, especially, 16/28.
In-leyde, *pp.* laid in, 37/21.
I-primseined, *pp.* catechized, 64/32, 65/32.
I-quenyted, *pp.* pleased, 36/35.
I-retted, *pp.* charged with, 68/26.
I-roted, *pp.* rooted, 20/27, 112/3, 148/18.
I-sacred, *pp.* sacred, consecrated, 132/28.
I-scomfyte, *pp.* discomfited, 116/20.
I-shent, *pp.* ruined, 68/28, 38/16.
I-shwerne, *pp.* sworn, 24/26.
I-slawe, *pp.* slain, 80/13.
I-stablet, *pp.* established, 64/27.
I-storbet, *pp.* disturbed, 124/34.
I-suywed, *pp.* issued, shot, 116/9.
I-swewed, *pp.* showed, 64/12.
I-told, *pp.* reckoned, 2/4.
I-wepned, *pp.* armed, 80/11.
I-worth, *pp.* become, 102/6, 148/14.
I-wyted, *pp.* blamed, 8/13.

Kappe, *sb.* 46/17; lappe, R. 47/17.
Karue, *vb.* k. of, cut off, 14/23.
Kene, *adj.* keen, fierce, sharp, 112/33.
Kepynge, *sb.* keeping, watch, guard, 53/10; kypynge, 52/9.

Kernel, *sb.* battlement, 10/28.
Knyghten, *sb.* knights', 92/15.
Kynde, *sb.* kind, nature; of k., by nature, naturally, 18/27; Throgh k. of Troy, Through our Trojan origin, 22/26.
Kynde, *adj.* natural, own, 6/27.
Kyndly, *adj.* kindly, natural, 76/16.
Kyndly, *adv.* kindly, naturally, by birth, 22/28; kyndlych, 22/24.
Kynly, *adv.* by kin, by birth, 23/24. See *Kyndly*.

Laked, *vb.* enjoyd, 132/29; lakyd, 133/29.
Large, *adj.* bounteous, generous, 25/2; largh, 24/1.
Laser, *sb.* lazar, leper, 44/13.
Lastes, *sb.* faults, deceits, 102/21.
Latest, *adj.* last in place, 52/1.
Lede, *adj.* folk, 4/24; leed, 64/18.
Lef, *adj.* dear, 108/8; lefe, 111/34.
Lered, *adj.* learned, 42/2; lerid, 43/2.
Leth, *vb.* let, hindered, 52/7; leth, allowed, causd, 64/5.
Lette, *sb.* let, hindrance, 94/5.
Leue, *adj.* dear, 108/6.
Leue, *vb.* leave, omit, 108/10.
Leuet, *vb.* loved, 118/35.
Lewed, *adj.* lewd, uneducated, vulgar, 42/2; lewid, 43/2.
Lewidly, *adv.* lewdly, wickedly, 47/30.
Leyden, *vb.* leyden on, laid on, attacked, 96/2; leydyn, 97/2.
Lif, *adj.* lief, pleasing, 8/22.
Lodderly, *adv.* wickedly, 22/33.
Lodesmane, *sb.* pilot, leader, 22/21; 36/28.
Loge, *sb.* lodge, wattled hut, 10/3.
Loghe, *adj.* low, short, 88/10.
Loly, *adj.* grim, terrible, 40/8, 58/12.
Lolych, *adj.* lovely, affable, 103/18; louelyche, 102/18.
Lome, *adv.* often, frequently, 44/36.
Lost, *sb.* loss, 112/23; loste, 146/12; lostes, 8/2; lostis, 97/24; Lostys, 9/2.
Loth, *adj.* hateful, unpleasant, 14/6, 30/19.
Lotles, *adj.* buxom, obedient, 114/4.
Lout, *vb.* l. ham, lout themselves, do obeisance, 44/26.
Lowe, *sb.* love, 131/14.
Lych, *sb.* like, body, 88/26; lyche, 89.
Lyddere, *adj.* lither, bad, wicked, 44/6, 68/7; lyder, 32/14.
Lyddyrly, *adv.* litherly, wickedly, 46/30.
Lyddernysse, *sb.* litherness, wickednesse, 76/29.
Lygne, *adj.* gentle?, 102/17.
Lyket, *vb.* was liked, pleasd, 34/14.
Lyme, *sb.* limit, bond?, 62/18.
Lyue, *sb.* life, 82/32.

Manequelleres, *sb.* mankillers, 125/16.
Maner, *sb.* manner; many m. metes, many kind of meats, 62/28; manners, politeness, 22/10.
Mane-shipe, *sb.* manship, courtesy, 4/33; manshype, 70/12.
Manly, *adv.* in a manly way, 24/6.
Manred, *sb.* homage, 56/20.
Man-shyply, *adv.* worshipfully, reverently, 66/22.
Manslaghtres, *sb.* manslaughterers, 124/16.
Mansynge, *sb.* cursing, excommunication, 120/17.
Marche, *sb.* march, border, 72/18; 146/31.
Mayny, *sb.* 115/22. See *Meignè*.
Me, *pron.* men (comp. German *man*), one, they, 16/5, 24/14, 32/27, 42/10, 70/33.
Meet-yeuer, *sb.* meat-giver, 54/25; met-yeuer, 112/36. Comp. *metegavel*.
Meignè, *sb.* household troops, 22/18; menny, 79/28; mennye, 79/13; meny, 115/10; meygnees, 66/5; meyne, 26/8; meynne, 39/5; meyngne, 27/9. O. Fr. *meignee, meyne*.
Mekely, *adv.* humbly, kindly, 48/2.
Membres, *sb.* manly m., manly members, privy parts, 44/18.
Merres, *sb.* meres, boundaries, 38/17.
Meste, *adv.* most, 42/7.
Mesury, *sb.* misery, 43/15.
Meteful, *adj.* moderate, 113/24. See *Methefull*.
Methe, *sb.* moderation, 98/12.
Methefull, *adj.* moderate, 112/24.
Methelyche, *adj.* moderate, 70/18;

methlych, 98/28; metlych, 76/15; metlyche, 98/10; middle-sized.
Mich, *adj.* much, large, 34/27; mich yuell, much or great evil, leprosy, 32/7.
Modelyng, *sb.* meddling, 56/18.
Mone, *sb.* moan, complaint, 28/23.
Morowenynge, *sb.* morning, 82/21.
Most, *vb.* must, could, 40/22.
Mostdele, *adv.* mostdeal, mostly, 16/1.
Mostwhat, *adv.* mostly, for the most part, 88/17.
Mother-church, *sb.* cathedral, 36/29.
Motynge, *sb.* mooting, pleading, disputing, 144/29.
Mych, *adj.* large, 56/29, 74/1; myche, 74/2.
Myght & mayn, might & main, 116/15.
Mynyed, *vb.* reminded, warned, 74/29, 84/25.
Mys-byfelle, *vb.* misbefell, fell amiss, 124/15; mys-be-felle, 125/16.
Mysdone, *vb.* misdo, 101/32.
Myse-lyckenys, *sb.* mislikeness, strange shape (a wolf-woman), 131/25.
Myssayse, *sb.* misease, 40/5. O. Fr. *mesaise*.
Myssayse, *adj.* miseased, 114/23; myssaysid, 115/22.

Na, *adv.* not, 112/2.
Name, *sb.* name, 6/33.
Name, *vb.* took, 6/12; name, 2/22, 23; n. an hand, 72/24; namen, 80/4; n. sekernesse, took surety, 74/8.
Namely, *adv.* especially, 52/17, 66/4.
Namy, *vb.* name, 130/10.
Narow, *adv.* narrowly, closely, 40/21; narowe, 4/19; narrow, 41/22, 97/10.
Naroweis, narrow ways, 81/26.
Nas, *vb.* ne was, was not, 16/21, 26/21, 72/16, 114/8.
Nat forthy, *conj.* notwithstanding, nevertheless, 76/20, 77/22.
Nathales, *conj.* nevertheless, 78/10.
Neb, *sb.* (? nose), face, *vultus*, 98/11.
Neght, *adv.* nigh, nearly, 26/13.
Nembre, *sb.* number, 101/22; nenbre, 100/23.
Ner, *vb.* ne were, were not, 30/31, 100/8.
Neue, *sb.* nephew, 14/33. See *eme*.
Neuer (ne were), *vb.* should never be, 121/18; neuere, 120/18.
Never no more, 48/31.
Neyght, *adv.* nigh, near, 74/16.
Nobelych, noblych, *adv.* nobly, 35/29, 34/29.
Noon-dayes, *sb.* noonday, 50/32.
North, by n., to the north of, 70/26.
Nuy, *sb.* noy, vexation, affliction, 90/7. Comp. *noxia*.
Nyst, ne wist, knew not, 4/29.
Nythe, *sb.* a nythe = at night, 72/33.

O, *num.* one, 106/12; oo, 89/26, 106/12.
O, *prep.* of, 108/34.
Of, *adv.* off, 12/11, 14/23, 32/4, 74/32.
Oftere, *adv.* oftener, 54/22.
Oke, *vb.* ached, paind, 108/9.
Omost, omyste, *adv.* overmost, uppermost, 106/1, 107/1.
Ond, *sb.* hatred, malice, 110/30; onde, 111/30.
Onful, *adj.* ondfull, malicious, 102/24; onfull, 103/24.
Onþer, *prep.* under, 6/31.
Opyn, *adj.* open, uncovered, 42/22.
Ordeynly, *adv.* well o. = in good order, 46/12.
Ortrow, *sb.* overtrow, mistrust, suspicion, 128/14, 132/14; artrow, 133.
Ost, *adj.* burnt ?, 50/2.
Ostmen, *sb.* hostmen, soldiers, 82/23.
Ostynge, *sb.* hosting, expedition, 16/14; see *Hostyngis*.
Oþer, *conj.* other, or, 24/6.
Other, *adj.* second, 50/29, 76/12, 88/8.
Ouerd[r]ede, *vb.* ouerdrede, overdreaded, 14/20.
Ouergoste, *vb.* goest beyond, 38/17.
Ouer-hand, *sb.* upperhand, superiority, 34/6, 50/11, 106/3, 118/23.
Ouersaille, *vb.* sail over, upset ?, 16/12.
Ouerthrowen, *vb. pass.* be prostrated, 62/21.
Ouer-truste, *sb.* overboldness, presumption, 22/10. Comp. *Overhope*.
Oure, *pron.* ours, 24/7, 96/15.
Out-chese, *vb.* choose out, 34/8.
Out-commyn, *adj.* come from foreign parts, 12/29; out-comen, 18/5.
Out-tak, *pp.* outtaken, except, 122/8.

Owne, *adj.* = own house, tent, 62/31.
Owre, *prep.* over, 130/2.
Ows, *pron.* us, 22/3, 30.

Paas, *sb.* pass, 104/22; pas, 104/25; paace, 55/9.
Panetrye, *sb.* pantry, 62/27. Fr. *paneterie*.
Pany, *sb.* penny, 92/5.
Paralys, *adj.* paralysed folk, 44/14.
Parlement, *sb.* conference, 6/21, 18/11, 72/31. O. Fr. *parlement*.
Party, *sb.* part, side, 110/1.
Party arms, arms vertically divided, 10/4.
Pelfre, *sb.* pilfer, plunder, 52/8. O. Fr. *pelfrer*.
Pledynge, *sb.* suing, 112/20.
Plenary, *adv.* fully, openly, 31/27.
Pleneden, *vb.* sported, 74/18; pleydyn, 75.
Plente, *sb.* generosity, 102/31.
Plete, *sb.* plate, 46/10.
Poere, *sb.* power, O. Fr. 48/11.
Postes, *sb.* pillars, supports, 120/6.
Powere, *sb.* forces, 2/22, 4/17.
Prayes, *sb.* preys, booty, 80/1.
Prayes-takynge, *sb.* taking of booty, 78/27; pray-takynge, 118/11.
Praye, *vb.* prey, plunder, 80/3, 23; preedyn, plundered, 81/3.
Presons, *sb.* prisoners, 54/5, 15.
Primseine, *vb.* 'sign with the cross, make a catechumen,' 64/32.
Priuisant, *adj.* foreseeing?, 80/28.
Prout, prowt, *adj.* proud, 22/5, 38/20.
Prow, *vb.* prove, 85/5.
Prutter, *adj.* prouder, 56/7.
Pullid, *vb.* plundered, robbed, 145/9.
Pullynge, *sb.* pilling, plundering, 112/21.
Purueynge, *adj.* provident, prudent, 98/21.
Pute, *sb.* pit, 36/18.
Pylfre, *sb.* pilfer, plunder, pillage, 80/4, 114/24. O. Fr. *pelfrer*.
Pynsynge, *sb.* affliction, 88/6.

Queller, *sb.* killer, 44/5.
Queme, *vb.* please, satisfy, 54/30, 98/15.
Quenyntyse, queyntyse, *sb.* cunning, craft, 98/22, 99/22. O Fr. *queintise*.
Quethene, *vb.* overcome R., 44/15.
Queynt, *adj.* cunning, sly, wily, 26/1, 98/21; quent, 27/1; queynth, 128/2.
Quyte, *adj.* quit, clear, free, 96/20.
Quytten, *pp.* free, clean away, 80/27.

Raas, *sb.* race, rush, 16/12.
Radyr, *adv.* rather, more willingly, 7/13; earlier, before, 91/20.
Raght, *vb.* raught, recked, 32/9.
Ran, *vb.* r. to harme, 112/26.
Rascayll, *sb.* rascal, rabble, 50/21. O. Fr. *rascayle*.
Rathe, *adv.* soon, 24/29, 84/1; rather, sooner, 28/23, 68/14; before, 90/20, 130/4.
Rather, *adj.* earlier, previous, original, 86/4, 88/2.
Raunceoun, *sb.* ransom, 46/29.
Rebuked, *vb.* repulsed, checked, 34/34.
Recet, *sb.* refuge, harbour, 18/29, 30/28, 56/5; recette, 19/29, 31/28.
Recheste, *vb.* reckest, 108/9.
Rede, *sb.* counsel, 10/18, 68/33.
Remewid, *vb.* removed, 147/13.
Rere, *vb.* rear, raise, exalt, 46/2; rerid, took, captured, lifted, 107/30.
Rescewyd, *vb.* received, 123/27.
Reue, *vb.* rob, 114/3; rew, 115/3.
Reuer, *sb.* riever, robber, 112/21.
Reut, *sb.* ruth, pity, 8/1; reuth, 22/34, 54/18.
Reuthful, *adj.* ruthful, 32/23.
Reuynge, *sb.* rieving, plundering, 144/31; rewynge, 145/25; reyuynge, 145/32.
Rewe, *vb.* rue, regret, 146/1.
Robbed, *vb.* plundered, 80/23.
Rodes, *sb.* r. crucyfyed, crucifixes, 122/1.
Roghly, *adv.* r. lokynge, rough looking, 88/9.
Row, *adv.* r. lokynge, rough looking, 89/9. A. S. *rúw*.
Ruthlynge, *sb.* rattling, 16/13.
Rychesshe, *sb.* riches, 96/24. Fr. *richesse*.
Rygge, *sb.* back, 58/2.
Ryght, *vb.* r. vp, raise up, 44/3; set up again, restore, 86/4.
Ryuely, *adv.* especially?, 128/12.

Salletis, *sb.* sallets, light helmets, 11/24.
Sam-crysp, *adj.* somewhat curled, 98/11; sam-roed, *adj.* somewhat ruddy, 54/27; same rede, 89/8; saunrede, 88/8. A. S. *sam*, half.
Saue, *vb.* saw, 49/6, 146/11.
Sawe, *prep.* save, except, 18/21, 54/10.
Sawe, *vb.* save, 73/6; sawit, saved, 4/23.
Schavnge, *sb.* change, 51/6.
Scomfited, *pp.* discomfited, 117/19.
Screwid, *adj.* shrewd, cursed, bad, evil, 69/6.
See way, seaway (comp. highway, roadway), 80/3.
Seke, *adj.* sick, 66/13.
Sekernesse, *sb.* security, 74/8; syke[r]-nesse, 50/7.
Sekiritesse, *sb.* securities, bonds, 6/22.
Selcouth, *adj.* various, 28/33; wonderful, 44/11, 120/1, 126/13.
Selth, *sb.* happiness, benefit, 50/8, 92/18; success, 98/23.
Selue, *adj.* same, 100/18.
Selyly, *adv.* happily, 42/32.
Semblant, glad s., 98/12; sterne s., 98/27; fayr s., 102/18; semblant, 112/36; look, countenance.
Senne, *sb.* synod, 120/15.
Senthe, *adj.* seventh, 58/30; Senfte, 59/29.
Seysyne, *sb.* seisin, possession, 82/12.
Sheldrun, *sb.* shields, 31/29.
Shendshype, *sb.* injury, harm, 114/3; shenshipp, 115/3.
Sho, *pron.* she, 4/1.
Shorthlych, *adv.* shortly, presently, 114/22.
Shroue, *vb. int.* confessed, 130/23.
Shyrth, *sb.* shirt, 42/5.
Sill, *vb.* sell, 39/34. See *Syllene*.
Sitè, *sb.* city, 32/17, 18.
Sithe, *sb.* times, 26/6.
Skyer, *sb.* squire, 8/32, 33.
Slaght, *sb.* slaughter, 14/16, 20/28, 116/36, 138/32.
Slaked, *vb.* slacked, failed, 48/24.
Sleghly, *adv.* slily, 68/3.
Sleghtes, *sb.* contrivances, 128/13.
Slegthlych, *adv.* craftily, 128/9; sleghtly, 144/17.
Slouedyne, *vb.* slew, 39/8.
Smert, *adj.* smart, sharp, rough; smert lond, rough wild land, 128/29.
Smertly, *adv.* smartly, vigorously, 104/33; smyrtly, 105/33.
Smyth, *vb.* smite, 24/12; *pt.* smote, 106/35.
Snel, *adj.* quick, active, 74/27.
Snellych, *adv.* quickly, 82/3.
Soine, *adv.* soon, 60/11.
Soldrys, *sb.* shoulders, 89/11.
Solempnelych, *adv.* solemnly, 90/25.
Soth, *adj.* sooth, true, 54/1.
Sortelych, *adv.* shortly, 93/14; Sortely, *adv.* shortly, 149/22.
Sorynesse, *sb.* sorriness, soreness, sorrow, 110/1, 112/23.
Spares, *sb.* battle-axe, 83/7; sparris, 17/12. See *Sparth*.
Sparth, *sb.* battle-axe, 74/11, 26, 33; sparthes, 16/13.
Spendynge, *sb.* spending, money, 78/27.
Spourges, *sb.* spurge, thing to get rid of, scourge, 112/3. Comp. O. Fr. *espourger*.
Spousbrych, *sb.* spousebreach, adultery, 102/23.
Spousehede, spoushode, *sb.* wedded state, 64/30.
Sproty, *adj.* thin, small, 54/28. Comp. *Sprot*, sprout, splinter.
Stabil, *vb.* establish, confirm, 69/29; stable, 68/30.
Staluarthly, *adv.* stalwartly, sturdily, 116/1.
Stalwardnesse, *sb.* stalwartness, strength, sturdiness, 52/2; stalwarthnesse, 54/20.
Sted, *sb.* stead, place, state, 22/35; 'state,' 23/35.
Stordy, *adj.* sturdy, 118/33; stordyer, 116/2.
Storkes, *sb.* storks, 28/24.
Strange, *adj.* strong, 54/8.
Streynth, *vb.* strength, strengthen, 68/30.
Streynth, *sb.* strength, force, meaning, 90/29, 96/14.
Streyntnesse, *sb.* strongness, strength, 94/24; streyntnys, 95/24.
Stronge, *adj.* strong, stormy, 66/33.

Stronge, *adv.* strongly, greatly, 4/3.
Stryffly, *adv.* strivingly (? for 'styffly'), 26/29. See *Styfly*.
Styd, *sb.* stead, place, 42/5; stydde, 42/6; styddes, places, 50/11.
Styfly, *adv.* strongly, valiantly, 80/8, 104/31.
Stylly, *adv.* stilly, in secret, 46/19, 150/12.
Stynte, *vb.* stopped, 111/30; stynt, 112/30.
Suget, *adj.* subject, 24/21; subyect, 26/33; subyett, 26/21. O. Fr. *Suget*.
Surnesse, *sb.* sureness, security, 51/7.
Surtey, swrte, *sb.* surety, 75/9. Fr. *Sûreté*.
Sybbe, *sb.* relation, 64/29.
Syblynges, *adv.* kinwise, with relatives, 102/23.
Sybrede, *sb.* relationship, 42/11.
Sydlynge, *adv.* sidling, obliquely, 94/19.
Sygge, *vb.* say, 54/18, 98/20.
Sykernesse, *sb.* security, 50/7. See *Sekernesse*.
Sykyrlychest, *adv.* most securely, 68/34.
Syllene, *vb.* sell, 38/32, 40/5.
Syller, *sb.* seller, 40/1.

Talent, *sb.* desire, wish, 6/25.
Tanked, *pp.* thanked, 14/19.
Tene, *sb.* tene, hatred, 4/12.
Tened, *pp.* grieved, vexed, 4/3.
Tethynges, *sb.* tithings, tithes, 66/1.
Thare, *conj.* there = where, 82/18.
Tharmes, *sb.* entrails, intestines, 88/4.
That, *adv.*? read *thar*, 2/24, 65/5.
Thay, *dem.* those, 80/12, 14, 90/26, 116/3; they, the, 97/14.
Theghe, *conj.* though, 18/27, 32/9.
Ther, *conj.* where, 32/8, 57/30, 128/4; ther-to-for, *adv.* before, 63/29.
Thewes, *sb.* qualities, 16/28, 90/34.
Thewis, *sb.* thieves, 81/30.
Thedynge, *sb.* tiding, 10/7; thythyngis, 11/7, 35/31; tythynge, 6/15.
this, *adj.* these, 21/29.
Tho, *conj.* when, 4/9.
Tho, *prep.* to, 62/19.
Thoght, *conj.* though, 15/31, 32/7.
Tholle, *vb.* thole, endure, suffer, 4/20; þolled, 42/3, 118/24; tholleth, sufferd, 38/15; tholy, *infin.* 40/5.
Tholmode, *adj.* forbearing, 98/15.
Thondred, *sb.* thunder, 58/28.
Þorwe, ? go through with it, 28/12.
Thre, *num.* a thre, in three parts, 66/20; at thre, 67/20; tre, 14/5.
Thretynge, *sb.* threatening, 60/9; tretynge, 70/9.
Þriddesum, *adj.* third, 14/1; thrydsome, 32/20; thyrdesum, 15/2.
Þurleth, *vb.* thirleth, pierceth, 112/5.
Thus, from t. = from this, thence, 60/15.
Thwey, *num.* two, 12/35.
To, *adv.* too, 54/26, 82/3.
To, *art.* the, 10/27.
Toght, *vb.* thought, 16/25, 18/7.
To-hakked, *vb.* hackt to pieces, 82/2.
Toke, *vb.* reacht (to the knee), 116/27.
Told, *vb.* reckoned, 60/8; Moch told by ham-self, thought much of themselves, 148/3; tolde, thought, 94/1, 96/25, 97/24.
Tollid, *pp.* sufferd, 39/15.
Ton, *sb.* town, 12/33; ton land, townland, division of parish, 124/2.
Toun londe, *sb.* townland, township, division of parish, 125/2.
Tre, *adj.* three, 14/5.
Trewage, *sb.* tribute, 114/29; truage, 60/15. O. Fr. *trewage*.
Trogh, *prep.* through, 22/6, 26/1, 62/18; troghe, 20/24; trogh, 28/29.
Trukked, *vb.* trucked, was bartered?, 48/9.
Trywly, *adv.* truly, 12/27.
Turnet to, *vb.* turn to, 78/32.
Turues, *sb.* turves, turfs, 30/17.
Twonty, *num.* twenty, 50/28.
Tynge, *sb.* things, 24/14; thing, 28/8; notynge, nothing, 16/5, 20/9.
Tynke, *vb.* think, 6/26; tynken, 22/4.
Tywesday, tywesdaye, tyvysday, tywysday, *sb.* Tuesday, 98/1, 99/1, 2.

Vanhope, *sb.* wanhope, despair, 57/5.
Vend, *vb.* wend, 54/15.
Vepne, *sb.* weapon, 110/24.
Vickydly, *adv.* wickedly, 53/35.
Vncharged, *vb.* unloaded, 10/2.

Vndedde, *vb.* undid, ruined, 114/4; vndid, 115/4. See *Vndo*.
Vnderfonge, *vb.* receive, 62/19; vndrefynge, 4/32, 8/1; vndyrfonge, received, 9/1.
Vndo, *vb.* destroy, ruin, 20/6, 22/4, 84/11, 94/32.
Vndrestondeth, *vb.* understand ye, *imper.* 20/15.
Vneuenly, *adj.* uneven, unequal, inferior, 30/25.
Vnhap, *sb.* mishap, 56/5.
Vnhele, *sb.* misfortune, 126/12.
Vnkede, *adj.* strange, 20/20, 24/28; vnkyde, 31/6, 35/2.
Vnkyndely, *adv.* unnaturally, 87/18.
Vnmercyably, *adv.* unmerciably, mercilessly, 55/1. Comp. O. Fr. *merciable*.
Vnmesurable, *adv.* unmeasurably, beyond measure, 54/26; vnmeasurably, 55/26.
Vnmetly, *adv.* unmeetly, immoderately, 118/33.
Vnnowmmerabill, *adj.* innumerable, 19/15.
Vnryght, *sb.* wrong, injustice, 86/18; vnryght, 112/32.
Vnsikere, *adj.* unsure, 10/2.
Vnsurnes, *sb.* unsureness, insecurity, 51/8.
Vnwardly, *adj.* unwary, ignorant, 52/14.
Vnwarly, *adv.* unwarely, unexpectedly, 78/9.
Vnwemmed, *pp.* unstained, undefiled, 44/7, 92/4; vnwemyd, 93/3.
Vpon, *prep.* from, against, 106/32.
Vp-rerid, *pp.* raisd up, 13/2.
Vptake, *vb.* succour, help, support, 92/3.
Vreke, *vb.* wreak, avenge, 145/8.
Vs-self, ourselves, 22/1.
Vyrchip, *vb.* worship, 43/20.
Vyrchipp, *sb.* worship, 5/32.

Wanhope, *sb.* despair, 17/29, 32/12.
Wanhoply, *adj.* desperate, 88/6.
Warliere, *adv.* more warily, 12/19.
Waryr, *adv.* more cautiously, 13/19.
Warytres, *sb.* cursed trees, gallows, 34/16; 'galosis,' 35/16.
Wax, *vb.* grew, turnd, became, 2/7; arose, grew up, 26/22.
Wayte, *sb.* wait, expectation, 110/33.
Wecchene, *vb.* move, take, 36/31. A.S. *wecgan* : comp. weigh anchor.
Wel, *adv.* well, quite, 52/13; frankly, 78/30; much, 78/32; very, 2/11.
Wenttene, *vb.* think, say?, 106/8.
Wenynge, *sb.* whining, mourning, 54/17.
Wepne, *sb.* weapon, out of w. = out of harness, when not fighting, 54/31; wepyn, 55/31.
Wepne, *vb.* weapon, arm, 50/27; weppen, 16/32; wepyn, 17/30.
Wer, *vb.* war, 'wer the fight,' 10/27; were, 11/28; weren, *inf.* 82/16; werret, 3/6; werry, *inf.* 8/11; werryn, 83/16.
Were, *sb.* war, 125/32.
Weued, *sb.* altar, 42/26. A. S.
Whan, *vb.* won, 136/11.
Whan-hopefully, *adv.* unhopefully, despairingly, 16/30.
What for, on account of, 108/21.
Whodyreso, *adv.* whithersoever, 40/11.
Whybelers, *sb.* quibblers?, 148/3.
Whyle, *sb.* the w. = at that time?, 82/13; = *conj.* while, 82/15; That whylle = at that time, 124/20.
Whyth, *prep.* with, 130/31.
Wille, *adj.* wild, rough, 129/29.
Willych, *adv.* vilely, 54/1.
Wndre, *prep.* under, 28/7.
Wnneth, *conj.* unneth, scarcely, 88/15.
Wnselth, *sb.* disadvantage, 50/8.
Wo, *adj.* sorry, 4/35.
Wode, *adv.* wildly, madly, 94/34.
Wodere, *adj.* wilder, madder, 42/27.
Woke, *adj.* weak, 146/10.
Wolf, woman turned into a, 130.
Wombe, *sb.* belly, 88/4.
Wonder, *adj.* wonderful, 130/11.
Wone, *sb.* custom, usage, 34/15.
Wonet, *pp.* wont, accustomed, 38/33.
Wonne, *sb.* custom, 66/29. See *Wone*.
Wood, *adj.* mad, wild, 42/27.
Worth, *vb.* happened, existed, was, 38/26; became, 124/33.
Worthly, (worthy, R.) *vb.* honor, 92/3.
Worthy, *vb.* honor, 93/2.

Wrech, *sb.* wreak, vengeance, 120/34; wreche, 130/29.
Wrechydnys, *sb.* vengeance, 131/33.
Wrethe, *sb.* wrath, 74/12.
Wreyer, *sb.* wrayer, betrayer, 102/24.
Wryttes, *sb.* writs, writings, letters, 50/13; yne wrytte, in writing, 64/7.
Wryynge, *sb.* distorting, falsifying, 102/11.
Wsyd, *pp.* used, accustomed, practist, skilful, 23/27.
Wyage, *sb.* voyage, 62/7.
Wylle, *sb.* at w. = as he wished, 58/22.
Wynd abydynge, wind-bound, waiting for wind, 80/6.
Wyrchiply, *adv.* worshiply, worshipfully, 67/22.
Wyssed, *vb.* directed, guided, 94/19; wissede, 95/19.
Wyt, *prep.* with, 50/15.
Wytht, *prep.* with, 46/17.
Wyttaylle, *sb.* victual, 104/6.
Wyttynge, *sb.* witting, knowledge, 27/3.

-y, *infin.*: See—assembly, castely, defouly, forswely, namy, tholy, werry, 8/11.
Yardes, *sb.* boughs, sticks, 30/17.
Yarne, *vb.* rushed, ran, 82/3.
Y-cast, *pp.* purposed, 68/30.
Y-douted hym, was afraid, 86/1.
Y-dene, *pp.* done, 28/29.
Y-dropesie, *sb.* dropsy, 44/14.
Yern, *vb.* rush, hasten, 74/1, 76/2.
Yernynge, *vb.* running, rushing, 94 34.
Yew, *vb.* yeve, give, 55/32; yewyn, *pp.* 81/9.
Y-lacet, *pp.* laced, 52/11.
Y-leued, *pp.* believed, 102/10.
Ymeuyd, *pp.* moved, 101/4.
Yold, *sb.* yule, Christmas, 42, 34; yolde, 43/34.
Yolowe, *adj.* yellow, 98/10.
Yorne, *adv.* gerne, eagerly, 92 21; yonre, 104/10.
Yought, *sb.* youth, 68/20, 118/27.
Youre, *adj.* yare, active, 114/27.
Yoy, *sb.* joy, 100/29.
Yroked, *pp.* rocked, 42/9.
Y-rotid, *pp.* rooted, 149/17.
Yuel, mich, much evil, leprosy, 32/7.
Yurne, *sb.* eagerness?, 112/1.

INDEX

(MAINLY)

BY THOMAS AUSTIN.

(For a completer Index, see Mr. Dimock's, *Gir. Camb. Op.* v. 440–60.)

Adam of Yarnemouth (Yarmouth), sent with others to Ireland, 102.

Adrian, Pope, grants privileges in Ireland to Henry II, 90; pledges to, 152.

Albertus, Cardinal, sent into Normandy to enquire into Becket's death, 68.

Aldelinesson, *see* **Fitz-Audeline.**

Alexander, Lord of the world, 34/3.

Alexander III, Pope, 44; grants Ireland to Henry II by Bull, 90.

Amlyffy (? Queenstown), a harbour of Dublin, John the Mad lands there, 46.

Angoy (Anjou), Henry II Earl of, 6.

Ardfynan (Archphinan), castle built at, 148/22.

Armagh, Council of Irish Clergy held there, 38; Archbishop too old to attend Synod of Cashel, 66.

Arms, the Irish to be forbidden, 152.

Arthur, kings of Ireland paid him tribute, 136/13.

Banow, Fitz-stephen lands there, 10.

Barry, Philip de (brother of Giraldus Cambrensis), comes to Ireland in 1183 to help Fitz-stephen, 126.

Barry, Robert de, at siege of Wexford, 10; his bravery at Ossory, 14; his character, 16; his courage, 100; is nephew of Maurice and Robert Fitz-stephen, 100. (Was elder brother of Giraldus Cambrensis.)

Barry, Robert de, son of above Robert, 100.

Basile, or Basilia, sister of Earl Striguil, marries Raymond Fitz-gerald, 84; writes to her husband, 108.

Bayonne, the Irish came from, 136.

Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury, is murdered, 40–44.

Beggeryng, Isle of, at mouth of Wexford harbour, is occupied by the Irish after burning Wexford, 54.

Belyn, King of Britain, 136.

Bernardson, Robert, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.

Berynger, William, sent with others to Ireland, 102.

Bohun, Humfrey de, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.

Bowmen, sacrilegious, die suddenly, 62.

Braken, St., prophecy of, 138.

Breuse (Braose), **Philip de**, is left at Wexford by Henry II, 70; has land in Limerick granted him by the king, 122; is afraid of attacking Limerick, 124.

Bride, St., his body found, 150.

Bristow (Bristol), Macmorgh goes there, 6.

Brittayne, Brytayn (Britany or Bretagne), story of a Breton ship, 12; Earl of Bretagne (Richard) rebels against his father Henry II, 78.

Byldewdys (Buildwas), **Rolf**, Abbot of, attends Synod of Cashel, 64.

Canterbury, Becket murdered there, 40.
Cantetone, Reymond de, 100; slain, 148/25.
Carrick (*Carraig*, a rock), near Wexford, Robert Fitz-stephen builds a castle there, 26; is besieged there, 48.
Cashel, the Archbishop of, and Henry II, attend Synod there, 64; the Constitutions of Cashel, 64; Earl Striguil goes there, 82; account of the Synod sent to the Pope, 90; the Pass barricaded against the English, 104.
Castles built in Ireland, 126, 128, 148.
Chester, Earl of, 86; John, Constable of, 128/12.
Clandechestre (? Gloucestershire), Henry II goes there, 56.
Cogan, Miles de, commands at Dublin, 46; drives O'Rourke off from it, 58; returns to Ireland with Fitz-Audeline, 110; invades Connaught, 120; goes to England and returns, 122; has land in Cork given him, 122; at Limerick, 124; is slain at Lismore, 124.
Cogan, Richard de, brother of Miles, comes with a force into Ireland, 126.
Columba, St., his prophecies, 116, 118, 138; his body found, 150.
Comyn, John, Archbishop of Dublin, sent to Ireland to prepare the way for Prince John, 134/1.
Connaught, Cathel, Archbishop of, is at Synod of Cashel, 64.
Connaught, Roderick, King of, is an ally of O'Rourke, 4; yields to Henry II, 62; ravages Meath, 82; holds conference with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; his territory invaded by Miles de Cogan, 120; Roderick beaten by the English, 122.
Constitutions of Cashel, 64.
Cork, men of, defeated at sea by the English, 80; left in charge of Richard of London, 122; lands there divided among the English leaders, 122.
Cormack, son of the King of Cork, rebels and is beheaded, 106.
Courci, John de, sees Fitz-Audeline's rascality, and sends for troops to invade Ulster, 114; he takes Down, 114; Vivian tries to get rid of him, 114; besieged, 116; beaten at Firlee, but victorious elsewhere, 118; description of him, 118; is childless, 120; again made Ruler of Ireland, 146/15.
Coutances, Henry II does penance there for Becket's death, 72.
Cursed meat forbidden, 66.

Davy, a Welshman, nephew of Raymond Fitz-gerald, swims the Shannon, 94.
Dermot Maccarthy, King of Cork, does homage to Henry II, 60; fears to attack Raymond Fitz-gerald, 80; helped by Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; his son Cormack beheaded, 106; forced to make peace with the English, 122; leaves them, 124; slain, 148–150.
Dermot Macmorgh, King of Leinster, seduces Rory's wife, Devorgilla, 2; his men refuse to help him, and he seeks foreign aid, 4; Henry II befriends him, 6; agrees to give his daughter, and Leinster to Struguil in return for help, 6; goes to Wales, 6; returns to Ireland and is joined by Robert Fitz-stephen, 8, 10; assaults Wexford, and captures it, 12; invades Ossory, and defeats the Prince, 14; many of his men desert him, 18; is urged to turn against the English, 20; harangues the men of Leinster, 20; O'Conor makes terms with him, 24; goes to attack Dublin, which submits, 26; aspires to be King of Ireland, 28; his daughter is married to Earl Striguil, 36; marches to Dublin, which is captured by him, 36; his son beheaded by O'Conor, King of Connaught, 38; his death, and burial at Ferns, 44; his character, 44.
Desmond given to Miles de Cogan and Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, 122, 124.
Deuelyn (Dublin), Laurence, Archbishop of, attends Synod at Cashel, 64; dies at Eu, 14 Nov., 1180, 132;

John Comyn, Archbishop of, 132/24, 134/1.
Deuelyn (Dublin), Macmorgh marches there, and captures it, 26; taken by Raymond Fitz-gerald and Miles of Cogan, 36; Earl Striguil leaves a force there, 38; Hasculf attacks it, but is defeated, 46; the Irish besiege it, 48; are defeated there, 52; given up with other ports to Henry II by Striguil, 56; O'Rourke assaults it, 58; chief men left there by Henry II, to keep Ireland, 70; men of Dublin slaughtered by Donald O'Brien, 82; Trinity Church (Cathedral?), 110.
Dosnild (Donnell), King of Ossory, joins Raymond Fitz-gerald against O'Brien, 104; his address to the troops, 104.
Down taken by De Courcy, 114; he is besieged there, 116; relics at, 150.
Dundonald, Raymond le Gros builds a fort there, 30.

Eclipses, three in three years, 124.
England, the Silver Isle; Ireland, the Golden, 152.
English, a phantom army scares them, 16; Fitz-stephen addresses them, 22; the Irish enslave English children, 38; the English in Dublin defeat the Irish, 50; Irish Services to be in the English fashion, 66; the English in Ireland demand to be set under Reimund Fitz-gerald, 78; they invade Offaly, 78; rout a Cork fleet, 80; besieged in Limerick by O'Brien, 104; permitted to take food from the churches, 120; advance to Tuam, 122; defeat King Roderick, 122.

Felmeth, 128/26.
Ferand, William, shows bravery at Waterford, 32.
Ferns, Macmorgh winters there, 8; holds a strong position near it, 18; his death and burial there, 44.
Firlee (a territory on the river Bann, co. Antrim), de Courci defeated there, 118.
Fitz-Audeline, William de, sent to Ireland by Henry II, 110; envies and hates the Geraldines, 110; is self-indulgent and a plunderer, 112; robs Maurice Fitz-gerald's sons, 112; is a bad character, 112–114; is recald to England, 122.
Fitz-gerald, Alexander, son of Maurice, his bravery, 50.
Fitz-gerald, Davy, nephew of Raymond, 94.
Fitz-gerald, Gerald, son of Raymond, his bravery, 50.
Fitz-gerald, Maurice, half-brother to Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, helps Macmorgh, 8; has land granted him by Macmorgh, 12; arrives with forces at Wexford, 24; at Dublin, 48; harangues his men, 50; left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70; warns de Lacy of coming treachery, 74; description of him, 76; his courage, 100; his death, 112.
Fitz-gerald, Nesta, daughter of Maurice, marries Hervey of Montmaurice, 92.
Fitz-gerald, Raymond (Le Gros), son of Maurice Fitzgerald, and nephew of Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, sent to Ireland by Henry II, 30; repels the men of Waterford, 32; joins Earl Striguil, 34; joins in taking Waterford and Dublin, 36; sent by Henry II into Gascony, 40; is in Dublin, 48; his bravery at Dublin, 50; left as Viceroy in Ireland with Striguil, and invades Offaly, in command of the English troops, 78; marches towards Waterford, 80; goes to Wales, 82; lands at Wexford, and saves Striguil, 84; marches against O'Connor, 84; restores peace, 86; marches towards Limerick, 94; crosses the Shannon and takes Limerick, 96; description of him, 98; victuals Limerick, 100; marches there against O'Brien, 104; captures it, 106; marches to Cork, and beats Cormack, 106; has a letter from his wife, 108; commits Limerick to O'Brien, 108; surrenders his government to Henry, 110; is childless, 120; sails to Cork, and helps to put down the rebellion, 126.

Fitz-gerald, William, father of Raymond, dies, 82.
Fitz-gerald, William, eldest son of Maurice, marries Helen Fitz-gilbert, 92.
Fitz-henry, Meiler, his bravery, 14, 100; leads the attack on Limerick, 106; gets Kildare, 128.
Fitz-henry, Robert, brother of Meiler, 100.
Fitz-hugh, Raymond, 100, slain, 148,
Fitz-stephen, Sir Robert, Constable of South Wales, is set free by Rys, the Prince, 8; collects troops to help Macmorgh, 8; lands at Banow, and marches to Wexford with him, 10; stands firm to Macmorgh, 18; urged to retire from Ferns, 20; harangues the English, 22; helps to defeat O'Conor, 26; advises Macmorgh to get more English help, 28; is besieged in Carrick Castle, 48; his defence, 52; deceived into a surrender, 52; described, 54; imprisoned by Henry II, but pardoned after, 60; left by Henry II as a leader in Ireland, 70; his courage, 100; (? same) goes into Ireland with Fitz-Audeline, 110; and is robbed of lands by him, 112; is childless, 120; attacked by the Irish, 126; his right to come to Ireland, 134.
Fitz-stephen, Maurice, 30.
Fitz-stephen, Meredus, son of Sir Robert, dies at Cork, 124.
Fitz-stephen, Raymond, loses some of his lands, 112.
Fitz-stephen, Rolf, son of Robert, 120.
Forthred, Fothred, Fothurtu, now Forth, in Carlow, 128/24.
Frederick, Emperor of Germany, 44.
French warfare contrasted with Irish and Welsh, 151.
Fresel, Keeper of Waterford, is slain by his guides, 84.

Geoffrey, Earl of Bretagne, son of Henry II, rebels, 76; is overcome, 86; dies, 132.
Gerald de Barri (Giraldus Cambrensis), 62, 78; comes to Ireland, 126; his advice on the conquest and government of Ireland, 150-2. His brothers: *see* **Barry**.
Geraldines, the, envied, 110; praisd, 113.
Germon, Gurguntius, 136/10.
Glanuyl, Ralph de, defeats Henry II's sons, 86.
Glyndelagh (Glendalough) hills, 36.
Golden Isle, Ireland, 152.
Goshawk, story of Henry II's, 56.
Gothred, King of Man, has letters from Striguil, 48.
Griffin, Robert, nephew of Maurice Fitz-gerald, has a dream, 73; saves de Laci from Rory's treachery, 74; slays Rory, 76; gets a castle, 128/24.
Gundeville, Hugh de, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.
Gurguntius, Belyn's son, 136/10.
Gylmory, K., at Arthur's feast at Karlyon, 136/14.

Hasculf, chief man in Dublin, escapes from it, 36; goes with forty Norse ships to attack it, and is captured, 46; is beheaded, 48.
Haverford, 72.
Helen, sister of Earl Striguil, given to William, son of Maurice Fitz-gerald, 92.
Henry II of England, 2; Macmorgh seeks help from him, 4; appeals to his subjects to aid Macmorgh, 6; forbids trade with Ireland, 40; his Irish edict, 48; lands at Waterford, 58; imprisons Fitz-stephen, 60; the Kings of Cork and Limerick do him homage, 60; the Kings of Connaught and Meath also yield to him, 62; feast given by him, 62; assembles Clergy at Cashel, and has Constitutions made, 64; his Irish affairs, 68; leaves Ireland, 70; despises the speaking stone of Lechlavar, 72; goes to Haverford, and Normandy, and does penance for Becket's death at Coutances, 72; makes peace with the French king, 72; his sons rebel, 76; collects troops at Rouen, 78; leaves Ireland to viceroys, 78; overcomes his sons, 86; Merlin's prophecy about his sons, 88; description of him, 88; gets a grant of the Lordship of Ireland from the

Pope, 90; recalls Raymond Fitzgerald, 102; his Irish Commissioners return, 110.
Henry, son of Henry II, rebels against his father, 68, 76; overcome, 86; dies, 132.
Hervey of Mountmaurice has land granted him, 12; wishes prisoners to be butchered (they're drownd), 34; at Waterford, 56; succeeds Raymond Fitz-gerald as Constable, 82; is jealous of him, 92; marries Nesta Fitz-gerald, 92; sends lies about Raymond Fitz-gerald to Henry II, 102; his description, 102; childless, 120; turns monk, 126.

Irish Church, spoild by John, 146.
Irish folk, 52, 78, 82, 90, 110; Northerners true, Southerners false, 126; are false, 136, 142; plunder, 144; conspire, 150; tribute to be taken from, 152.

Jeroboam, 142/18.
John of Salisbury purchases privileges in Ireland for Henry II from Pope Adrian, 92; goes to Ireland, 130.
John the Herford, 128/26.
John the Wood (mad) leads forty Norse ships against Dublin, and is slain, 46.
John, Constable of Chester, goes to Ireland, 128.
John, Prince, son of Henry II, sent to Ireland, A.D. 1185, 134; his failure there, and its causes, 136–149; bad state of Ireland under him, 144; new edition of the *Expugnacio* sent him, 152.
Julius Caesar, 84/3.

Kenalayne, men of, 150/2.
Kildare, Bishop of, helps to deceive the English, 52.
Kildare, given to Meyler, but changed for Leix, 128/27.
Kyldalo (Killaloe), 106.
Kylka, 128/25.

Lateran Council (March 1179), 124.
Lacy, Hugh de, goes with William son of Aldeline as messenger to the Kings of Connaught and Meath, 62; left in Ireland as a leader by Henry II, 70; meets O'Rourke, 72; treacherously attacked by him, 74; returns to Ireland as Seneschal, 122; fortifies Leinster and Meath, 128; is suspected of aiming at Kingdom, 128; goes to England and returns, 130; is recald from Ireland, 134; is slain A.D. 1186, 150.
Llandaff, Ralph, Archdeacon of, attends Synod of Cashel, 64.
Lechlavar, Stone of, speaks, 70.
Leix, changed for Kildare, 128/29.
Leycestre (Leicester), Earl of, captured by Henry II, 86.
Leinster, governed by Macmorgh, 2; Rory and the King of Connaught invade it, 4; Macmorgh harangues the men of Leinster, 20; had few castles, 128/23; some built, 128.
Limerick, O'Brien, King of, is warred on by the King of Connaught, 26; Limerick left in charge of Miles of St. David's, 100; burnt by O'Brien, 110; Sir Robert Fitz-stephen and others go there, but retreat, 122.
Lismore, Henry II goes there, 60; Christian, Bishop of, and Papal Legate, presides at Synod of Cashel, 64; Lismore attacked by the English, 80; Miles de Cogan goes there, 124; a castle built there, 148/22 (ruins still in being.—D.).
London, Richard of, Governor of Cork A.D. 1177, 122/28.
Louis, King of France, 44.

Maccarthy, *see* Dermot Maccarthy.
Mac Donlevy, King of Ulster, flees from de Courcy, 114; besieges de Courcy in Down, 116; is defeated, 116.
Macdonough, Prince of Ossory, is defeated by Macmorgh, and sues for peace, 14.
Macmorgh, *see* Dermot Macmorgh.
Macmorgh, Eve, daughter of Dermot, marries Earl Striguil, 36.
Macsaghlin of Olan, is taken prisoner at Waterford, 37.

Mac-Tire slays Miles de Cogan, 124.
Man, Isle of, governed by King Gothred, 48.
Marseilles, 132/7.
Masturel, William, joins Henry II, 68.
Meath, Rory king there, 2; ravaged by Earl Striguil, 38, by O'Conor, 84; yielded to Henry II, 62; wolf-woman in, 130; is well castled, 128/23, 130/9.
Merlin, prophecies of, 10, 34, 44, 58, 62, 70, 88.
Meyler, son of Raymond Fitz-gerald's cousin is at Wexford, 84; swims the Shannon, 94; description of him, 98; castle built for, 130/7.
Miles of St. David's, cousin of Raymond Fitz-gerald, left in charge of Limerick, 100.
Milford Haven, Wales, 124/15.
Moling, St., prophecies of, 34, 58, 62, 138.
Mountmaurice, *see* Hervey.
Myles of Cogan helps in taking Dublin, 36; goes to Lismore, and is slain there, 124. *See* Cogan.
Myght (Meath) destroyed by O'Connor, 84.

Newenham (Newnham), in Clandechestre, 56.
Newry, de Courci conquers at Ivor's Bridge near, 118.
Nicol, a priest, attends Synod of Cashel, 64; ? Prior of Wallingford, conveys Alexander's Bull into Ireland, 90.
Normans, John's young, pull the beards of the Irish chiefs, 140; are John's worst advisers, 142, 146.
Norsemen attack Dublin, 46.
Not, William, his bravery, 52.

Oboy, castle built in, 130/8.
O'Brien, Donald, King of Limerick and Thomond is warred against by the King of Connaught, and defeats him, 26; does homage to Henry II, 60; slaughters the men of Dublin, 82; rebels against Henry, 92; besieges Limerick, 104; holds conference with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; burns Limerick, 110.
O'Conor, Roderic, King of Connaught and Ireland, tries to raise the country against Macmorgh and the English, 18; addresses his followers, 20; comes to terms, 24; makes war on the King of Limerick, and is defeated, 26; beheads Macmorgh's son, 38; ravages Meath, 84.
Odrone (Odroon, a territory in co. Carlow, 52), Striguil defeats a Leinster force in a pass near, 54.
Ofolanes (Offaly, in north of the present co. Kildare), Leinster, is invaded by the English, 78.
Okenseley, Macmurgh there, 18; Macmurgh of Okensely joins Raymond Fitz-gerald, 104.
Olethan, 148/25.
Omurthy, 128/25.
Onolan, 128/24.
O'Phelan (Olan), 30, 37.
Ophelayn, 112.
O'Rourke, *see* Rory.
Osbern (Osborne) of Hereford, sent into Ireland, 102.
Ossory (Kilkenny, etc., in Leinster) invaded by Macmorgh, 14, 62.

Paris, 133/8.
Parliament (Conference) at Rorik's Hill, 74.
Patrick, St., prophecy of, 138; his body found, 150.
Pec, Richard de, 128/19.
Pembroke, Henry II sails thence, 56.
Phantom army terrifies the English, 16.
Philip of Worcester, 134.
Poitou, Earl of, Richard, son of Henry II, rebels with his brothers, 78.
Pope: his right to all islands, 136; grants Ireland to Henry II, 136.

Rathwyldes Tower, 36.
Rauf, son-in-law of Miles de Cogan, slain at Lismore, 124.
Raymond Fitzhugh (hues-sone), 100.
Raymond le Gras, *see* Fitz-gerald, Raymond.

Redlesford, Walter de, kills John the Wood, 46; castle built to him, 128/25.
Rehoboam: Prince John foolishly imitates him, 142.
Richard, Earl of Poitou, son of Henry II, rebels against his father, 78; is overcome, 86.
Richard of London is in charge of Cork, 122.
Richard of the pek (Peak) reaches Ireland, 128/19.
Robert de Bygaz, 130/8.
Robert de Po(w)er, Constable of Waterford, comes to Ireland, 122.
Roger le Poer slain, 150.
Rolf, son of Robert Fitz-stephen, 76.
Rorik's Hill, Conference held there with Rory, 74.
Rory (O'Rourke), King of Meath, left by his wife, 2; marches into Leinster to avenge his shame, 4; assaults Dublin, 58; yields to Henry II, 62; has a conference with de Lacy, 72; treacherously attacks him, 74; is slain by Maurice Fitz-gerald, 76.
Rys, son of Griffin, Prince of Wales, sets Fitz-stephen free, 8.

Salisbury, John of, 92, 130.
Scotland, King of, taken by Henry II, 86; a Papal Legate goes to Scotland, 114.
Shestre (Chester), Earl of, captured by Henry II, 86.
Shynen (Shannon), borders Meath, 82; the river swum, 94; King of Connaught there, 106.
St. James, 72.
Stevenson, *see* **Fitz-stephen.**
Striguil, Richard, Fitz-gilbert, Earl of, agrees to aid Macmorgh, and has Leinster given him, 6; receives letters from him, 28; sends Raymond le Gras to Ireland, 30; lands at Waterford, and assaults the town, 34; captures it, and marries Macmorgh's daughter, 36; leaves a force in Dublin, 38; his description, 54; sails to England, and yields Dublin and other ports to Henry II, 56; waits at Pembroke for favourable wind, 58; left as Viceroy in Ireland with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 78; asks help of him, and promises him his sister Basil, 84; saved by him, 84; his death, 108; burial, 110; his right to come to Ireland, 134.
Sur, parts Leinster and Munster, 30; King of Limerick comes there, 60; Raymond there, 84.

Tachmeho, 130/7.
Theodinus, Cardinal, comes to Normandy, to Henry II, 68.
Troy, English sprung from, 22.
Tuam, in Galway, occupied by the English, 122.
Tybraghnych, Tibraghny in S.W. Kilkenny, 60.
Tyllagh, 128/26.

Ulster invaded by de Courci, 114.

Velletri, Archbishop Comyn consecrated at, A.D. 1182, 132.
Vivian, a Papal Legate, comes to Down, 114; holds a Synod at Dublin, 120.
Vryel, in Ulster (the present counties of Louth, Armagh, and Monahan), 114; de Courci defeated there, 118.

Wales, 6, 8.
Wallingford, Nichol, Prior of, conveys Papal Bull to Ireland, 90.
Walter, Theobald, 150/1.
Waterford, Raymond le Gras lands near it, 30; capture by him of seventy of its inhabitants, 32; and butchery of them, 34; Earl Striguil lands there, 34; assault of it by him, and capture of it, 34, 36; the Irish slay the English there, 84; Council of Irish clergy gathered there, 90; its walls, 116.
Weysford (Wexford) men threaten to kill Fitz-stephen, 54; Henry II sails thence to England, 70; Raymond lands there, 84.
Weysford (Wexford), Bishop of, deceives the English, 52.
Wicklow, Castle, 112; Wykynlo, 92.
Worcester, Philip of, takes Hugh de Lacy's post, and is curst by the Irish, 134.

00045440

Digitized with financial assistance from

HT Parekh FOUNDATION

An Initiative by HDFC

WITH YOU, RIGHT THROUGH

on 15 October, 2018